This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

http://books.google.com

Digitized by Google

.6
FG2931

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

¶The first Booke

OF THE HISTO-

rie of the Discouerie and Con-

queſt of the Eaſt Indias, enterpriſed by the Portingales, in their daungerous Nauigations, in the time of King *Don Iohn*, the ſecond of that *name*.

VVhich Hiſtorie conteineth

much varietie of matter, very profitable for all Nauigators, and not vnpleaſaunt to the Readers.

Set foorth in the Portingale language, by *Herman Lopes de Caſtaneda*.

AND NOW TRANSlated into Engliſh, by N. L. *Gentleman*.

¶Imprinted at London, by *Thomas Eaſt*.

1582.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

To the right Worshipfull

Sir Fraunces Drake, Knight, N.L.G. wisheth all prosperitie.

THey haue an auncient custome in Persia (the which is also obserued throughout all Asia) that none will enterprise to visit the king, noble man, or particularly any other person of countenance, but he carieth with him some thing to present him with all worthy of thanks, the which is not onely done in token of great humilitie & obedience, but also of a zealous loue & friendly affection to their superiours & wel willers. So I (Right worshipfull following this Persian president) hauing taken vpon me this simple translation out of the Portingale tongue, into our English language, am bold to present & dedicate the same vnto you as a signification of my entire good will. The history conteineth the discouerie and Conquest of the East Indias, made by sundry worthy Captaines of the Portingales, in the time of king Don Manuel, & of the king Don Iohn the second of that name, with the discription, not onely of the country, but also of euery harbor apperteining to euery place whervnto they came, & of the great resistance they found in the same, by reson wherof there was sundry great battels many times fought, & likewise of the commodities & riches that euery of these places doth yeeld. And for that I know your worship, with great perill & daunger haue past those monstrous & bottomelesse seas, am therfore the more encouraged to desire & pray your worships patronage & defence therof, requesting you with all to pardon those imperfections, which I acknowledge to be very ma-

Digitized by Google

ny, & ſo much the more by reaſon of my long & many yeares continuaunce in foreine countries. Howbeit I hope to haue truly obſerued the literall ſence & full effect of the hiſtory, as the Author ſetteth it forth, which if it may pleaſe you to peruſe & accept in good part, I ſhalbe greatly emboldened to proceede & publiſh alſo the ſecond & third booke, which I am aſſured will neither be vnpleaſant nor vnprofitable to the readers. Thus alwaies wiſhing your good worſhip ſuch proſperous continuance and like fortunate ſucceſſe as God hath hetherto ſent you in your daungerous trauaile & affayres, and as maye euerye waye content your owne heartes deſire, doe euen ſo take my leaue. From London the fift of March.

1582.

¶ Your worſhips alwayes to commaund,

Nicholas Lichefield.

Digitized by Google

¶TO THE MOST HIGH and mightie Prince our King and Soueraigne, Don Iohn, the third of that name, king of Portingale, and of the Algarues, &c.

IT hath seemed to me so straunge and waighty a thing (most high & mightie Prince our king and Soueraigne) to vndertake to write of the most worthy and valyaunt acts which the Portingales haue enterprised in the discouery and conquest of the Indias, that oftentimes I thought to giue ouer and relinquish the same, but as the attempt and doing thereof was principally taken in hande for the glorye of Almightye God, and to conuert those barbarous Nations to the Christian Faith, and the great honour of your highnesse, wherein God gaue them (by his Omnipotent power, fauour and mercye) such fortunate successe in the atchieuing of those famous actes, without whose great prouidence it coulde neuer haue beene performed or brought to passe. And therefore doe hope and altogether comfort my selfe with the ayde and assistaunce of his diuine goodnesse in publishing the same by writing, yeelding the glorie thereof onely to his celestiall Godhead, and the

Digitized by Google

praise terrestriall vnto your excellent highnesse, and to that famous and most happie king, Don Manuel your Father. And although the fame be well knowne and spread abroad ouer all the worlde, yet it cannot be so perfectlye published vnlesse it bee set forth in writing. For by this meanes the memorie thereof will indure for euer, because that the writings will alwayes shew the same to bee present. Like as it doth continue those actes of the Greeks, and of the Romanes, the which long since is past so many yeares. And therefore they lyke wise men, perceiuing the same to be true, did trauaile all that was possible to leaue the memorie thereof by writing, and noting that the worthinesse of the same did consist much in the eloquence of the writer, did therefore chose such excellent learned men as those were that wrote the same, beeing thereto aided with much fauour and helpe, of others that were nothing inferior vnto theyr own, & possible were far greater, but for that the same did not remaine in writing, there is no memorie thereof, euen as those of the Assyrians, of the Medes, of the Persians, of the Affricans against the Romanes, of the Sweuians against Iulius Cæsar, of the spaniards against the Moores in the recouerye of their Countrey of Spayne. Principallye of those inuincible and holye Kinges of Portingale your auncestours, the King Don Alonso Henriques, the King Don Sancho his sonne, the King Don Alonso, the which did gettte the Kingdoms of Portingale, and of the Algarues, in the which conquest there was wonderfull greate actes done, and that by force of Armes. Of all the which almost there hath remayned no memorie of that there shoulde haue beene, yea, those matters of the Indyas, the which was done but yesterdaye, there is no man that hath the same in memorye more then foure personnes, so that if they had dyed, all the same hadde ended with them, the which woulde haue beene imputed to theyr greate shame and rebuke.

And

Digitized by Google

And I hauing a regarde, and partlye a remorſe to ſée this loſſe, did therefore determine my ſelfe to note of thoſe notable actes, the which your ſubiects hath done in the diſcouerie and Conqueſt of the Indias, of whoſe valiauntneſſe there is none of theyr progenitours of any age or antiquitie that euer did excéde them, no, nor yet were equall with them. For leauing a ſide the Conqueſt of the Semyrian of Cyro, Pirrhus, and of other barbarous, all (the which was nothing in compariſon of this) and take amongeſt them alſo that great Alexander the which was ſo feared and wondred at throughout all the world, ſince that the Indias is frequented by the Portingales: theyr doings are no more meruailed at, then a dead Lyon in reſpect of one aliue, for the Conqueſt of Alexander was all by lande, and againſt people that were ſmallie accuſtomed or trayned in the feates of warres, hée alwayes going in his roiall perſon, but this of the Indias was done by ſea, and that by your Captaines, being vpon the ſame a whole yeare, and eight monethes, and at the leaſt ſixe monethes, not along or néere any coaſt, but by the bottomeleſſe and great Occean Sea, and departing from the lymites of the Occident, and bearing ſayle alwayes towarde the Cape De las Playas, or ſuch lyke, without diſcouering or ſéeing any other thing, but onelye the heauens and water, going round about all the Spheare, a matter neuer before attempted by anye mortall man, nor yet almoſt imagined by anye, to put the ſame in practiſe, and they hauing paſt greate hunger, thirſt and other infirmityes, beſides that euerye day with thoſe furious ſtormes and raines, in daunger a thouſand times of their liues. And as I ſay, they hauing paſt thoſe feares and daungerous troubles by ſea, yet after theyr arriuall into the Indias, found themſelues in great and cruell battells, (not with men that did fight onely with their Bowes, Arrowes, and Speares,) as they didde in Alexanders time, but with ſuch as were ſtout & of a hauty ſtomacke, and with men that were experienced in the warres,

Digitized by Google

of the which kinde of people there is not onely in the Indias, but as farre as we can vnderstand, there is of the like in Asia, and besides theyr accustomed weapons (the which are many and good) yet they haue Ordinaunce, Calyeners, and many fire-workes more plentie then the Portingales had, so that the power of these men was alwaies so greate, that the force of king Poro with whome Alexander did fight, was not comparable, yet notwithstanding the Portingales did giue them continually the ouerthrow, although theyr strength was but small, yet they neuer left the warres, as Alexander did. And leauing off to declare of the Grekes and of theyr actes, and now to come to the Romanes, who with theyr huge armye, and with theyr greate Fleete, the which seemed to couer the whole Sea, thought to conquest the whole worlde, yet they neuer durst aduenture by Sea further then the redde Sea; neyther yet the greatest of their famous victoryes, did or was euer lyke vnto the least of those battayles that was done by our men in the Indyas, in the which it is so well knowne, most inuincible Prince, the greate prosperityes of the king your Father and you, so that without mouing of your selfe out of your pallaice, was discouered and conquered by your Captaines, the which neuer Princes could by themselues conquere or discouer, so that there was neuer Conquest of the Barbarous, nor of the Grecians, nor of the Latynists, the which was of lyke difficultie as this hath beene, neyther yet kinges nor Captaines, of none of all these Nations, was so equall in force nor yet in valyauntnesse as those of your Father, and of yours, the which is manifestly declared by the discourse of the historie following.

And touching theyr greate actes which they dydde worthelye fulfill and bring to passe, wee muste beleeue that it was Gods good will and pleasure, that these Barbarous, being discouered with theyr vaine Idolls, and with the false sect of Mahomet, should ioyne

them-

Digitized by Google

themselues with the Catholike faith, and to be as it wer in one Corall, and vnder one Pastour or Shepheard, as at this present the great multitude that hereby are increased to the Christian Religion, is a manifest testimonie and witnesse thereof. After which great exployts, your Highnes gaue commandement that the Christian doctrine of the Brotherhod of the company of Jesus should be there instructed & taught them, of the which your Highnesse hath had so speciall a care like a most godlye and Christian Prince, that not onely you were the first that commaunded the same to be brought from Rome, for that they might be the better instructed in all their Kingdomes, but also doeth maintaine vpon your owne charges in this holy companye the multitudes that doeth daylye submit themselues to the same. As we doe see in the sumptuous Colledge of Coimbro, where to ennoble and augment the honor of your kingdomes, you haue erected and founded an Vniuersitie: where, with the charges that is daylye done there, and with your countenaunce together, it is hoped, that the same may be accounted amongst the florishing Vniuersities of all Europe: whereas there is maintained also vpon your charges manye Colledges of the order of poore begging Friers, and others of like profession, for like as the reformation that was there made was profitable to them all: so he commaunded, that there should be many Diuines for to declare the Euangelycall law, which your Highnes is not onely at the charges with religious men, but also with temporall men, for as there is many of your subiects that doth defend ỹ state Republike or Common welth, and doth inlarge the same with their armour, so ther are others that doth beautifie the same with learning. These heroycall vertues of your Highnesse being so well knowen vnto me, forsomuch as this Booke, besides others that I haue made, hath some tast or kindred of learning, doth incourage me the more to set them forth, for that as I say, there may remains a perpetuall memorye of so notable actes as so many Gentlemen and Knights of

Digitized by Google

the Portingales your subiects haue done, the which hath be-
nefited me very much, my being in the Indias, where I tra-
uayled with my father, who by your Highnes commaun-
dement was sent thether to serue as a Iudge. And for that
I spent all my youth in learning, and gaue my selfe greatly
in reading of auncient Histories, and hauing seene and read
a great part thereof, did then immediately procure to know
and with all diligense did my best indeauour to vnderstand
what had bene done in the Discouerie of the Indias, and in
the Conquest of the same, by the Portingales, with the in-
tent as aforesayde, which was to make the same knowen,
and common to all men: by meanes whereof, and through
the instructions of sundry Gentlemen and Captaines, ma-
ny things came to my knowledge, by suche persons as were
then and there present, as well in the counsayls for the pro-
uision for that which should be done, as also in the executi-
on thereof, and otherwise by many letters and pamphlets,
the which were written by men of great credite, and lyke-
wise examined as sufficient witnesses for better credite of
the worke. Moreouer, I did not onely vse this diligence in
the Indias, but after my comming to Portingale dyde the
lyke. For as thole matters the which I meant to write
of, were many and of sundry other, so it was necessarye
to enforme my selfe of the same by manye: and beside that
thole that gaue me their instructions were sworn, yet I was
licensed to present them as witnesses. There were of them
that I sought in the most part of Portingale: for what with
the great trauell of my person, and expences of my goodes,
for that they were seperated in sundry parts, and in this I
haue spent the most part of my lyfe, forsomuch as this was
my onely recreation, hauing ioyned together all thole infor-
mations, since my being in the Vniuersitie of Coimbro, in
your Highnes seruice, at such time as I found my selfe not
occupied with the executing of my office, with great trouble
(not onely of the body, but also of the spirits) made an end
of this Booke with others, the which I doe humbly offer

vnto

Digitized by Google

vnto your Highnes, whome God (after manye and moſt
fortunate yeares, remayning in your place
the Prince) take and receiue you
from the ſeruice of the
earth, vnto the ioyes
of heauen.

Your Highnes moſt humble Orator,
Hernan Lopes de Caſtaneda.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

How the King Don Ioan the second

of that name, did send to seeke out by sea and by land the East India, and of the newes that was brought him of the same. Cap. 1.

THIS King Don Ioan the second of that name, of the Kings of Portingale, the thirteenth, perceiuing that all the Spices, Drugs, Stones, and other riches, which came to Venice, were brought out of a certaine Prouince of the East parte: And as he was a personage of an hautie stomacke and valiaunt minde, so was he desirous to inlarge his Kingdome, and increase the Christian faith, and therefore he determined to discouer by Sea, the Country, from whence so great plentie of riches came, that thereby his Subiects might be inriched, and his Kingdome of Portingale enioy all such commodities as came from thence to Venice. Moreouer, to discouer the same Countrey, he was the rather animated and enclined, for that he was giuen to vnderstand, that in the East India, were Christians, which were gouerned by a King of great power called Præsbiter

Digitized by Google

Ioan, with whom Don Ioan thought good to haue acquaintaunce, and to know him by his Ambaſſadors, and the rather for that he was reported to be a Chriſtian Prince: And therefore conſulting with the Coſmographers of that time, he gaue them in charge to procede and goe forwarde by example of others, which had ſayled along the Coaſt of Guynee, which Coaſt was before that time diſcouered by commaundement of the Prince his Vncle, Maſter of the Order of Chriſt, who had ſent for that purpoſe, one Bartholome Dyas, one of the Officers of his Storehouſe in Lyſhborne, who did diſcouer that great & monſtrous Cape, not knowen of our Auncеſtours, which is now called the Cape of Buena eſperansa: And hauing there matter of great terrour and daungers, he paſſed beyond the ſame, one hundred and fortie leagues, where, comming to a Riuer, which he named Rio del infante, from thence he retourned to Portingale. In this voyage, he gaue to the Ports, Herbours, and Riuers, where he toke in freſh water, theyr names, which at this preſent they doe retaine. Likewiſe, he erected there certaine markes with Croſſes, and with the roiall Armes of Portingale, and the laſt that he erected, was in a Rocke, the which they named, El pennol de la crus, which ſtandeth fifténe leagues on this ſide the foreſayde Riuer. And from thence he retourned without hearing any newes, or yet hauing any further intelligence of that India, by reaſon all the Inhabitaunts along thoſe Coaſts bée almoſt a ſauage and a wilde kinde of people, and of coulour blacke.

The order of Chriſt in Portingale giuē vnto Noble men & Gentlemen & to ſome that are made knights.

This voyage and intelligence, being intimated and reuealed to the King Don Ioan, he forthwith minded to diſcouer that India by land, albeit before that time he had diſpatched and ſent for the ſame diſcouerie intended, a Fryer of the order of Saint Fraunces, called Fryer Antonio de Lixbona, by land, in the company of a tempozall man, which two perſons, for want of the Arabian tongue, could not well trauaile thoſe parts, ſo that they went no farther then to Ieruſalem, from whence without profiting in the cauſe of that

Digitized by Google

that iourney, they returned into Portingale.

The King neuertheleſſe continuing to proſecute to effect his determination for diſcouerye of that India by lande, did thereuppon chooſe two of his owne ſeruauntes, men of good knowledge, and diligent in whatſoeuer they were to be imployed, the one called Pedro de Couillian, borne in the ſaide Village, and the other called Alonſo de Payua, borne in the Towne of Caſtil Blanco, which did verye well vnderſtande the language of Arabia, to whome he tolde how that he had made choyce of them, as of perſons apt to execute his pretence, which was to diſcouer by lande as well the Countrey of Presbiter Ioan, as alſo that, from whence the Drugges and Spices come to Venice: Giuing them in charge, and that earneſtlye to make diligent enquirye, and gather certaine knowledge whether that from the Cape of Buena Eſperansa forwarde there were anye Nauigation to the Eaſt India, and that they ſhoulde ſet downe all thinges they founde neceſſarye to bee knowen, or that they coulde by anye poſſible meane learne or gather of the ſame for certaintye: Commaunding alſo a Sea Carde to bee giuen them, which was taken out of a Mappe of the whole worlde, by a Maiſter of Arte, called Calſadilla, Biſhoppe of Vyſeu, who was a good Aſtronomer. Another iorney by lande attempted.

Moreouer, hee gaue them a Letter of credite, whereby they might bee ſuccoured and protected from, and in, daungers of death, and in caſes of neceſſitie and want of money, in whatſoeuer Kingdomes and Countreyes theyr happe ſhoulde be to trauayle. And for theyr charges, hee commaunded to giue them foure hundreth Crownes out of the Cheſt of the Orcherd of Almeryn: Of which ſumme, they toke as much as they deemed would ſuffice for theyr expence, vntill they came to Valencia in Aragon, putting the reſidue in the Bancke of Bartelme Florentine to be deliuered them there: and ſo he gaue them the bleſſing of God and his, in the preſence of the King

Digitized by Google

Don Manuel, who at that time was Duke of Veſa.

After this they departed from the Village of Santaxen the ſeauenth day of May, in the yeare of our Lord, a thouſand foure hundred foure ſcore and ſeauen, and came to Naples vpon Saint Iohns daye the ſame yeare, from whence they were ſet forward on their way, by Coſmo de Medicis ſonnes, and ſo went they from thence to the Rhoodes, of which Religion, wer then none other but Portingales. And from the Rhoodes they went to Alexandria, from thence to the Cayro, as Merchaunts, and from thence in the companie of certaine Moores of Feez, and Fremenceen, they came to Toro, which is a place that hath his harbour in the Straights of the red Sea in the Coaſt of Arabia, at the foote of the Mountaine Sinay, where they vnderſtood manie matters of the Indies, and of the trade thoſe places had out of the Straightes to Calicut: and therevpon they trauailed to another place in the ſelfe ſame Straightes of the Redde Sea, ouer the Coaſte of Aethiopia, from whence they went to Edin: And for that it was out of the waye to the Indies, they parted companye and ſeuered themſelues: Alonſo de Payua remained to go ouer by land to the Emperour of Aethiopia, which is he, whom we before haue named vpon errour Presbiter Ioan: for the certaintie is, this is he of whom Marco Paulo maketh mention in his booke, who gouerneth all the Indies, and whoſe Countrey ioyneth vnto the great Cam of Catayo, where in a battaile betweene them fought, the ſaide Preſter Ioan was vanquiſhed and dyed. And ſo thenceforth finally ended his Kingdome, ſo that in theſe dayes, there is in truth none of that name or race that raigneth or gouerneth. It is to be vnderſtoode, that Alonſo de payua did verely beleeue, that this Emperour of Aethiopia, was this ſuppoſed Presbiter Ioan, by reaſon he was informed and had intelligence that the ſame Emperour was a Chriſtian, and the People of his Kingdome were alſo Chriſtians, as hereafter I ſhall declare, when occaſion ſhall ſerue.

Presbiter Ioan by errour, is the verye Emperour of Aethiopia.

For

For which cause, I am in opinion, y Alonso did depart towards his Court, taking order and determining with Pedro de Couillian, that at a time appointed they should meet in the great Cayro: This conference and determination betweene them so had and accorded upon, Pedro de Couillian went towards the Indies in a shippe of the Moores of Cananor, and beeing come to the Indies, he went to the towne of Calicut, and to the Ilands of Goa, where hee gathered perfect information & intelligence of the spices which they haue in the Indies, and of the commodities which come from other places, and of the lyke sorte of Townes which were ther in the Indies, of all which he set downe the names in the Card he carried with him, albeit ill written. And after he had seene those places, he went to Sofala, where he gathered knowledge of the great Iland of San Laurenco, which the Moores doe call La ylla de la Luna: And seeing the people of Sofala, to be blacke as those of Guynee are, he thereupon surmised that all that coast was subdued, and that they might goe by Sea to the Indias, and therefore returning thence, he went to Ormuse, and so to Cayro, where hee vnderstode that Alonso de Payua was dead: And beeing desirous to returne to Portingale, by chaunce hee mette with two Iewes of Spaine, the one called Raby Abraham, borne in Vesa, the other Iosephi, borne in Lamego: These after the departure of Pedro Couillian and Alonso de Payua, from Portingale, tolde the King Don Ioan, that they had beene in the Cayro, & vnderstode there much newes of Ormuse, and of they⁹ tract had with and into the Indies: Whereupon the king sent letters by Raby Abraham to Pedro Couillian, and to Alonso de Payua, declaring that his pleasure was, they shoulde retourne in the companie of those Iewes, if they had seene all those thinges, whereof hee gaue them charge and commaundement, at their departure: if not, that then they shoulde sende by those Iewes a declaration, and true reporte what they had seene, and had intelligence of: And moreouer that they shoulde procure to attaine to the sight

Digitized by Google

of Presbiter Ioan, and alſo shewe and informe what they coulde concerning Ormuſe to Raby Abraham for that hée had ſworne by his lawe neuer to retourne to Portingale, vnleſſe hée firſt sawe the same: Vppon receipte of which letters and message, Pedro de Couillian his purpoſe of retourning to Portingale was then stayed: And therefore he forthwith dispatched Ioſeph with letters to the King, his Lorde and Maiſter, wherein hée related and fully declared in euery reſpect what hée had séene in the Indias, and of Sofala: and lykewiſe hée ſent the Carde in which all the Townes names were put downe, that hée had séene: Informing alſo the King Don Ioan, that the Emperour of Aethiopia is hée who is ſuppoſed to bée ỹ Presbiter Ioan: But I am of opinion, that in Portingale remaineth this name of Emperour of Aethiopia, for that in his kingdome hée is not called by the name of Preſter Ioan, as I will hereafter declare: When Ioſeph was departed, Pedro de Couillian, with Raby Abraham, went towards Ormuſe, and thence to the ſtraights of the red ſea, and hauing shewed to the ſame Raby thoſe places and ſcituation therof, Pedro Couillian then ſent him to Portingale, with letters to the king, importing what hée ſhewed him, and how that hée himſelfe was determined to make his voyage to Presbiter Ioan, and after this purſuing that his intent accordinglye, he came to the preſence of ỹ Emperour, that then ther reigned and gouerned, whoſe name was Alexander, of whome hée was verye well receiued, and when hée had preſented vnto him the letters of the king Don Ioan, he accepted the ſame verye ioyfully, in that they came from a Chriſtian Prince ſo farre diſtaunt from his Countrie: Howbeit hée gaue to the ſame little credite, and yet neuertheleſſe hée gaue vnto Pedro de Couillian, great honour and gifts: and when hée was in a readyneſſe to departe thence, and expected licence for the ſame, which hée had requeſted, and ſhould haue béene graunted him, the Emperour then deceaſed: after whome ſucceéded in the Empire another named Nahu, hée coulde not by him bée lycenſed to depart thence, neither

The king of Portingales letters deliuered to the Emperour of Aethiopia

yet

Digitized by Google

yet of his sonne Dauid, who was Emperour also, and succéeded Nahu: so that Pedro de Couillian, remayned in that Countrie, and neuer after returned into Portingale, neyther yet the king Don Ioan euer hearde or vnderstoode more of him, and therefore supposed him to bee dead. Onely there remaineth the information of his trauailes, which hee had sette downe and written in the letters which the Iewes carryed: After this came to Lisshborne a Frier out of the Countrie of Presbiter Ioan, to whome the king shewed great curtesie, and vpon whose reporte, and great relation made of that countrie, the king then determined to proceede in, and follow the discouering of the Indias by Sea, and therefore hee commaunded two little Shippes to bee made, committing the charge of that preparation, and appointing for ouerseer or surueiour of the Timber then cut for that purpose, one Ioan de Braganca his seruaunt borne in the woodes, in a village called Daluor, and was brought to Lisshborne to the house of the Myna, in the yeare of our Lord a thousande foure hundred nintie fiue, the fiue and twentie daye of October in the same yeare: and afterward did succéede in that kingdome, the most high king of glorious memorye Don Manuel, by whome also it appeared that he was there elected by diuine prouidence for discouery of those Countries and Prouinces, whereby the Christian faith is so greatly increased and inlarged, & the royall house of Portingale so mightely honoured, and the subiectes of the same so plenteously enriched.

1664 1665

¶How King Don Manuel the first of that name, prepared after the decease of King Don Ioan, to discouer the Indias by one Vasco de la Gama, and by other Captaines, and howe they departed from Lysshborne.

Chap. 2.

The

Digitized by Google

THE King Don Ioan being dead, Don Manuel then ſucceeded him, in whome appeared a higher ſtomacke, and more valyauntneſſe of minde (for atteining of things impregnable & making triall, and executing matters that paſſed common capacitie of man, and aboue the reach of naturall knowledge) then was in Alexander the greate. Don Manuel now come to the crowne, and earneſtly minded & bent to proſecute that which his predeceſſour Don Ioan had begun, for diſcouering of the Indias, and being therein greatly furthered by ſuch matter, order, and intelligence, as he found, and were left by the late king for Nauigation to thoſe farre countries: he then commaunded that Fernan Lorenſo, Treaſurer of the houſe of the Myna, ſhould cauſe to be made and prepared of the timber which was bought in king Iohns time, two ſhippes, whereunto after they were finiſhed, he gaue the names, to the one, the Angel Gabriel, being of an hundred and twentie tunne: and to the other Saint Raphael, a ſhippe of one hundred tunne. And to goe in the companie of theſe ſhips, the king then bought of a Pilot that was borne in Lagus, called Berrio, a Caruell of fiftie tunne, which had and bare the ſelfe name of the Pilot: Moreouer he bought a ſhip of two hundred tunne, of one Ayres Cortea. Theſe Shippes thus made readie and prepared, and the king then being in Monte mayor the new, with his firſt wife the Quéene, Dona Izabel, in the yeare a thouſand foure hundreth ninetie ſeuen, he then gaue the chiefe Captaine ſhippe of this voyage vnto the Indias to Vaſco de la Gama his ſeruaunt, who alſo before was ſeruaunt to Don Ioan, & borne in the towne of Syniſa, a harbour towne in the fields of Dorricke. The ſame was a man experimented in matters of the Sea, and of Nauigation, wherein he had done to this kingdome great ſeruice. And foraſmuch as he was a man of greate courage and valure, and therefore very apt and likely to atteine and atchieue the end, ỹ was by the king deſired, the king then accordingly in preſẽce of many noble perſonages, to his great praiſe,

Digitized by Google

praise, and no lesse incouragement, commaunded him, when he gaue him the charge of that iourney, earnestly also requiring him, to aunswere and satisfie the expectation and credit he had conceiued of him and reposed in him, which if he did, he would then very largely reward that his indeauour, and trauell, and so liberally deale towardes him, as he shoulde finde himselfe satisfied for that his diligence and seruice imployed: and for some proofe of those princely and louing speaches, he then beganne to make performaunce of parte thereof, at that verye instant, giuing him an Encommenda, with money to put himselfe in a readinesse for that voiage: And for to goe with him, the king also dispatched one Paulo de la Gama, brother to the Captaine Generall, and one Nicholas Coello, both of them the kings seruants, and men meete and apt for whatsoeuer matter of enterprise or cause of valiauntnesse: Moreouer he appointed one Bartholome Dyas, to goe with them in a Caruell to the Myna: And for that in the ships of warre, sufficient victualls for the people in the same, could not be carried further then to a place called Saint Blaze, where they must of course take in fresh water, the king gaue commaundement that the shippe of Ayres Correa should goe loaden with victuals vnto that place in the companie of the Flæt, and there to take out the same, and then to burne the said Ship. The Captaine Generall thus informed, and dispatched, departed with the other Captaines from the Kings court, towardes Lisborne, where the ships being in a readinesse, he imbarked his companie, beeing one hundred fortie and eight persons, in Belen, one league from Lisborne, vpon the Saturday being the eight day of Julye, in the yeare of our Lorde God, a thousand foure hundred nintie and seauen. At which imbarking all the religious men of our Ladie Church in Belen, which is a Monestarie of Saint Hierome, went in Procession bare foted, and in their cowles with ware Candles in their handes praieng, and the most part of the people of Lisborne with them, al of them weeping and pitieng those that so imbarked themselues, supposing they should all die in that

The number of persõs in this voyage.

Digitized by Google

ſo aduentrous and daungerous voiage, as in déede the preſumption and common opinion thereof was greate, and no leſſe to be adiudged of. The Generall and other his Captaines with their people ſo imbarked, and by the multitude and companie then preſent, commended to God and good fortune, they forthwith made ſaile and departed: The Captaine Generall went in the Ship called Saint Gabriel, hauing Pilot for ỹ ſame, one Pedro de Alanquer, which was Pilot with Bartholome Dyas, when he went to diſcouer ỹ riuer called El ryo del ynfante: The brother of the Captaine generall, went in the ſhip called S. Raphael: Nicholas Coello went in the Caruell Berrio, & one Gonſalo Gomes, ſeruaunt to the Captaine generall, went for Captaine of the ſhip that carried their victuals. Thus being ſet forward and vnder ſaile, the Captaine generall commaunded, that if by any happe whatſoeuer, they ſhould bée ſeuered and loſe each other, they ſhuld euery one make, and kéepe, their rote or courſe to Cabo Verde, where they would ioyne themſelues together againe. And ſo following their voiage, they came within eight dayes after to the ſight of the Ilandes of the Canaries, from whence going ouer againſt the Riuer called Ryo de Oro, the night did growe ſo darke, and ſuch great tempeſt and ſtorme roſe as they loſt each other, and therefore they retourned their courſe towardes Cabo Verde, and Paulo de la Gama, Nicholas Coello, Bartholome Dyas, and Gonſalo Gomes, hauing met, and after eight daies ſailing together, they came to ſight of their Captaine Generall, vpon the wedneſdaye in the Euening, and ſaluting him with many ſhot of ordinaunce, and with ſound of Trumpets, they ſpake vnto him, each of them heartely reioyſing, and thanking God for their ſafe meeting, and good fortune in this their firſt brunt of daunger and perill: The next day béeing the twenteth day of July, the Captaine generall with all his Fléet, attained vnto the Ilands of Sancty Ago: wher cõming to anker in ỹ play de Santa Maria, they remained there ſeuen daies, taking in ſuch water as they had need of, & repairing the yards of their ſhips and other

harmes

Digitized by Google

harmes they had receiued in the stormе past. Tewsday being the third day of August, the Captaine Generall departed thence, following his course to the East, but first before his departure he toke his leaue of Bartholome Dyas, who returned into Portingale: And going towarde the Cape of Buena Esperansa, with all the ships of his companie, hee entered the goulfe into the Sea, and from thence sailed all August, September, and October, in which time they sustained many and great tempests, or rather torments of outragious windes and raine, so that they expected nothing but present death, which still was represented before them by view of the manifolde daungers and perills, they presently then sawe, and whereof they were forced to abide the euenture: Being thus perplexed, God of his diuine goodnesse recomforted them, for vpon the saturdaye, being the fourth day of Nouember at nine of the clocke in the fore-noone, they sawe land, whereat they greatly reioyced, and all the Captaines being together, they then saluted the Generall, all of them apparelled in their best araie, and hauing decked and garnished their shippes with Flagges accordingly, they drew neere the land as the generall had commaunded, who was desirous to haue landed: Howbeit for that they did not know the land, he commaunded them to cast about a sea boord, and so they sailed along by the same vntill tewsdaie following, at what time they came to perfect viewe and sight of the land, perceiuing the same to lye lowe, and that there was a great bay, which as it was a conuenient place for the ships, so he commanded them to sail to an anker there, of purpose to take in water: And afterward they named it the Iland of Sancta Hælena. The people of the countrie within the said Iland, as our men afterward found the same: bee lyttle men, ill fauoured in the face, and of colour blacke: and when they did speake, it was in such manner as though they did alwayes sigh, their apparell is of beastes skinnes made after the manner of the French Cloakes, they truss vp and hide their members in certeine Cales made of wood very well wrought.

Bartholome Dyas returneth into Portingale

Description of the people & manners of Saint Helens Iland.

Digitized by Google

They haue for armes or weapons certaine ſtaues of an Oke tree bathed or toaſted with fire, at the endes whereof are hornes of beaſts, ſomwhat burnt or hardened with fire, alſo ſeruing them for ſwords, and wherewith they do hurt their enimie. Theſe people doe mainteine themſelues with rootes of hearbes, with Sea Woulfes, and Whale fiſh, of which the countrie there hath great plentie, and likewiſe of ſea crowes, and ſea mewes: Alſo they doe eate of beaſtes, which they call Gazelas, and of doues, and other beaſts and birds which they haue in the land: They keepe alſo dogs as thoſe ben of Portingale, barking after the ſame manner: The Generall thus lyeng at Anker, commaunded to goe rounde about the Ilande, to ſée if there were anie riuer of ſweete water, and finding none, he then ſent Nicholas Coello in his boate along the coaſt to ſéeke out water, which he found fowre leagues of from thence, the which he named Sancty Ago, from whence the whole Fléete prouided themſelues of freſh water. The next day the Generall and the other Captaines, and ſome of their companie went a ſhore, intending to ſée and view what manner of people they were, that inhabited that countrie or land, and whether they coulde informe him how farre from thence the Cape of Buena Eſperansa was, which he knew not, neither was the head or chiefe Pilot of that voyage of any certeintie which it was, for that in the voyage, wherein hée went before with Bartholome Dyas, he departed in the morning from the Cape into the Sea, and paſt the ſame in the night, with a fore-winde, and at his firſt going, came not néere the Shore: By reaſon wherof he did not know the land, notwithſtanding, hée coniectured and déemed it not aboue thirtie leagues diſtaunt from thence at the vttermoſt: The Generall being diſimbarked and come to land, and walking there he ouertoke a man, one of the inhabitaunts of the ſame, who was going to gather honny at the foote of a buſh, where the Bées made the ſame without anie hiue, with this man, ỹ generall returned vnto his ſhip, right well contented, thinking he had gotten by him an interpreter, but it happened not ſo, for ther

was

Digitized by Google

was not any of that company could vnderſtand him: The Generall commaunded to giue him meate, and he did both eate and drinke of all that was giuen him, and when they ſaw he vnderſtood none of their languages, nor any of them had any vnderſtanding of his, he was the next daye ſet vpon the ſhore well apparelled, from whence he went as it appeared, amongſt others his countrey men, for that the next day then following, (vpon ſhew of himſelfe to them) there came about the number of fifteene of his Countrey men, where our ſhips were: At ſight of which the Captaine generall went to lande, carrieng with him Spice, Golde, and Pearle, to make triall, whether thoſe people had any knowledge of the ſame, or of any part thereof: but by the lyttle eſtimation they ſeemed to make of thoſe things, it appeared they had no knowledge of the ſame. Then they gaue them bells, little rings of tinne, and counters, and of theſe things they wer very glad, and from thence forward vnto the next Saterday following, very many of them repayred to our Fleete, and thoſe people ſo returning to their Townes, one of our men deſirous to ſee the ſame, and to viewe the order and manner of their liues, craued then licence of the Generall to goe with them, whoſe petition, albeit he was verye vnwilling to condeſcend vnto, yet vanquiſhed by importunitie, he graunted the ſame. Fernan Veloſo (for ſo was his name that was licenſed) then going intheir company, they toke a Sea Woulfe, which they roſted at the foote of a hill, and ſupped altogethers: after which it then appeared, that they of that Countrey had armed themſelues, and practiſed treaſon againſt our men: for ſo ſone as they had ſupped, they cauſed Fernan Veloſo, to returne to our Fleete againe, which was hard by, and when he was departed from them, they followed and came after him a little and a little, the manner whereof, Fernan eſpieng & fearing, he therefore haſted to the water ſide, and hailed to our ſhips: The Generall then being at ſupper, and hearing that call, and looking out to landward, ſawe thoſe ſauage people comming after him, and preſently imagined they meant him harme, and

Treaſon by theſe men imagined againſt ours.

Digitized by Google

and therefore forthwith he commaunded the whole Fléete to put themſelues in battaile araye, and he himſelfe with certaine others, went to landward without anye weapons, deeming verely that thoſe blacke men meant him no harme, nor would offer anye force: and indéede when they ſawe our boates comming to the ſhoreward, they began to runne away, with a great clamour and outcrie, and ſo did manye others alſo which lay ſecretly hidden amongſt certeine buſhes there, which policie they vſed to traine our men the rather to lande, for when ours were diſimbarked and landed, they then returned and furiouſly ſet vpon them, ſhoting their darts, and ſling their other weapons in ſuch ſort, as they inforced our men to retire to their boates and imbarke themſelues, and that in haſt, taking with them Fernan Veloſo, which being done, the Negroes retourned to their townes, hauing hurt the Captaine generall & three others, who afterward remaining in that road foure dayes, could not ſée any moe of thoſe people, and therefore could not vſe any reuenge, for the damage they had done them.

¶ How the Captaine generall doubled the Cape of Buena eſperansa, and what hapned vntill they paſſed the Riuer called El Ryo del Infante. Cap. 3.

THE Fléete hauing taken in freſh water and fleſh which they néeded, the Generall and the reſt then departed thence vpon the Thurſday being the ſixteenth daye of Nouember, in the forenoone of the ſame daye, making their waye into the Sea, with a South ſouthweſt winde, and vpon the Saterdaye then next following in the euening, he came within ſight of the Cape of Buena eſperansa, and for that the winde was contrarye, as being then Southweſt, and the Cape lyeng Northeaſt Southeaſt, hée made his retourne into the Seawarde, whileſt

Digitized by Google

whilest the daye did indure, and when the night came, hée cast about towards the shoze, and so in that ozder he sayled vntill the Wensdaye following, which was the twentith day of November in which time he doubled the Cape: And going along the Coast with a soze winde, he passed with great pleasure of sundzy pastimes, and in sounding of the trumpets in all their ships, chiefly hauing their whole confidence in God, by whose diuine furtherance, they hoped to finde out, and attaine to that which they sought foz: So passing in this sozt along that Coast, they sawe vppon the land great stoze of Cattell, whereof some were large, some small, but all of them were growen and fat: Howbeit ther appeared to them no Townes within this lande, by reason that along those Coasts ther are none scituated: but further within the same, there be Townes and Villages inhabited, the houses whereof are all of earth couered with strawe.

The people are of colour somewhat blacke, and be apparailed as those of the Countrey of Sancta Helena, speaking the selfe same language, and vsing the selfe same sozte of darts, with some other weapons also foz their defence, and anoyaunce of their enimie. This Countrey is verye pleasaunt with Trées and Waters, and ioyning to this Cape on the South side, there is a great Harbour, which reacheth into the Lande fiue leagues, and at the entering it containeth well as much moze. The Cape of Buena esperansa béeing thus doubled, the Captaine Generall forthwith vpon the Sundaye after, which was Saint Katherins daye, came to the Watering of Saynt Blaze, which is three stoze leagues beyonde the Cape, béeing a verie great Baye, and passing good foz all Windes, except onelye the North winde. The people heere are somewhat blacke of colour, they couer themselues with skinnes, they fight with Dartes of woode tosted oz hardened in the fire, and vse foz Swozdes, Hozns and Bones of Beastes, and also they vse Stones to defende themselues agaynst theyr Enimies. In this Lande bée manye Elephauntes and great, also Oxen manye both large of

The watering of S. Blaze

stature,

Digitized by Google

ſtature, and very fat, whereof ſome haue no hornes: and vpon the fatteſt and faireſt of the ſame, the people do vſe to ride, ſadling them with pannells ſtuffed with the ſtrawe of Rye, as the manner is in Spayne, and vpon the ſame they put a certaine frame of woode, and ſo vſe it as a ſaddle to ride vppon, putting through the noſes of ſuch of them as they will ſell, a peece of woode, of that kinde whereof they make their arrowes. In this Harbour three Croſſebow ſhot from the ſhore, within the Sea, lieth a Rocke, in the which there be many Sea Woulfes, which are as large in bignes as great Beares, they be terrible, hauing great and long teeth, alſo ſo wilde and fierce, that they do forcible ſet vpon men: their ſkinnes be ſo hard that no ſpeare can pearce the ſame, albeit it be forced vpon it with great ſtrength and valure: they are like vnto Lions, and their little ones crye like young Goates, there be ſo many of them in ỹ Rocke, that when our men went thether of pleaſure one day, they ſaw of them at that inſtant, the number of three thouſand little and great. In this Rocke alſo be many Stares, which are as great as Duckes, but they doe not flye, by reaſon they haue no feathers in their wings, and they braye lyke vnto an Aſſe. The Captaine Generall being come to this Port or Baye, and lieng at Anker there, cauſed the ſhippes which carried their victualls, to be diſcharged thereof, and beſtowed the ſame in the others, commaunding thoſe Veſſells to be then burned, as it was ordained and commaunded by the King in that behalfe. In doing whereof, & other things alſo which were neceſſarye and needfull to be loked vnto, and foreſeene, for their more ſafetie in the reſt of their voyage, they remained ten dayes in that place, where, vpon the Friday next after the Captaine generall and the reſt had ariued, ther appeared vnto them, about the number of foure ſcore and ten men of that Countrey, ſome along vppon the ſandes, and ſome vpon the top of their Mountaines, which when the Generall ſawe, he and other the Captaines went to the ſhore ward, and all the company of the ſhippes went armed in their boates, carrieng ordinaunce with them, as

Sea vvolfs moſt firce & terrible beaſts

fearing

Digitized by Google

fearing the lyke chaunce y happened to them in the Ilande of Sancta Helena, the Boates then drawing neere to the shore, the Generall threw on lande little belles, which the Negroes toke vp, and some of them came so neere vnto him, that he gaue them the bells into their owne handes, whereat he wonderfully merualled, for that Bartholome Dyas had informed before, that when he was there, they did run away, and would not be allured to come so neere vnto. The Generall therfore finding y perceiuing contrary to his expectation, the gentlenesse of those blacke people, he then leapt out on lande with his men, making exchaunge of certaine red night caps with the Negroes for Bracelets of Iuory which they had, and so for that time departed. The Saterday next after came to the number of two hundreth blacke men: and more, some little, some great, bringing with them twelue Oxen and foure sheepe, and as our men went on shore, they began to play vpon foure Flutes accordingly with foure sundry voyces, the Musicke whereof sounded very well, which the Generall hearing, commaunded the trumpets to sound, and so they daunced with our men. In this pastime and feasting, and in buying their Oxen and sheepe, that daye passed ouer, and in the selfe same sort, vpon the Sunday following, sundry of the same, and many moe with them as well men as women, came againe bringing with them many kine, and hauing solde one Ox, our men saw certaine little Nigroes, which were hidden in certayne bushes, who had with them the weapons of the greater sort of men: wherein our men conjectured, that some treason was ment to them, and therfore the Generall commanded our people to retire to another place, which was of more securitie, and those blacke men went all along the shore directlye against our boates, vntill they came to the place where ours disimbarked themselues, and went vpon the lande in armour. The Nigroes then ioyned themselues as though they intended to fight, which the Generall perceiuing, and not willyng to doe them anye harme, did then retyre, imbarking himselfe, and for to feare them, comman-

Digitized by Google

ded two braſſe péces of Ordinaunce to be ſhot off, where-
The little Nigroes made more afeard then hurt
at they were amazed, and ranne away without any order, leauing their weapons behinde them. After this, the Captaine generall, cauſed to be carried on the ſhore, a certaine marke or Piller, with the King of Portingales Armes, and a Croſſe, which being there ſet and erected, the Nigroes pulled downe the ſame our men yet being there. Theſe dayes thus paſſed ouer, the Captaine generall with the reſt of the Fléete departed thence towards the Riuer called, Ryo del infante, vpon the Friday being the eight day of November, which was the Feaſt daye of the conception of our Lady, and in ſailing forward on their voyage, ther arole ſo great a ſtorme with a forewinde, vpon the daye of Saint Luke, that our whole Fléete did runne with there ſmall sayles, and that alſo verye low. In this courſe they loſt the company of Nicholas Coello, howbeit the next night after they all met, and ioyned together againe. Now hauing paſt and ſailed through this great ſtorm, or rather torment of wind, which then was ceaſed, the Captaine Generall, vppon the fiftéenth daye of December did diſcouer lande, which were certaine ſmall Rockes, being diſtaunt from the Harbour of Saint Blaze threeſcore leagues, and fiue leagues alſo from the other part of the Rocke called De la cruze, where Bartholome Dyas did erect his laſt marke: from which place to the Riuer Del Infante are fifteene leagues. This Countrey is very pleaſant and ſightly in viewe, and in the ſame is great ſtore of Cattell, and the further our Fléete ſayled on that Coaſt, the better and higher the Trées were, all which things our men might well perceiue and diſcerne, by reaſon they went ſo neere the ſhore with their ſhips. And vpon the Saterday they paſt hard by, and within ſight of the Rocke De la cruze, and for that they were then come ſo far forward as the Riuer Del infante, they were loath to paſſe the ſame, and thereof taking counſell all the next night, they went ſomewhat wide from the Coaſt, with a forewinde, vntill Euenſong time, and then the Winde came to the Eaſt, which was right againſt them, wherefore the Captaine

Digitized by Google

Captaine generall made to Seawarde, going in such sort, as sometime he kept the Sea, and sometime droue towards the lande, vntill the Tuesday being the twentith of December, at the setting of the Sunne, the winde then comming to the West, which was a forewinde, and whether to attayne to haue knowledge of the Lande they consulted all that night, which were best to doe. The next daye at tenne of the Clocke in the fore noone, they came to the Rocke aforesayde, which is three score leagues a fearne the place, wherevnto they minded to goe.

This Rocke, is the cause of the great Currents that are there, and the selfe same daye the Fleete through passed the same Course, with a great forewinde, which had also indured them three or foure dayes, and wherewith they ranne through those Currents, which greatlye they feared, and were in doubt to haue done. These daungerous Currents, thus safelye and happelye passed without losse or damage, they all were very glad and ioyfull, that their good Fortune was so haue passed the same in manner as Bartholome Dyas before that time had accordinglye done. Wherefore the Captaine generall, beeing animated and encouraged with this his great good lucke and Fortune, and after thankes giuen to God for the same, did then saye, that hee verelye beleeued, that it was Gods good will and pleasure that the Indias should be founde.

They safely passed the dāgerous currents

¶How the Captaine generall came to the Lande, called, La terra de la buena gente, and after went to the Riuer, called, Ryo de las buenas sennales: how hee brought their shippes on grounde, and of the great sickneſſe our people had after they arriued there. Chap. 4.

Digitized by Google

THus following their voyage, they perceiued that vpon Chriſtmas daye, they had diſcouered along the Coaſt, three ſcore and tenne leagues to the Eaſtward, which was the waye he carryed with him in his Regiſter, and wherein the Indias are: And heere the Fleete went along vpon the Sea, without taking land, ſo farre, that they began to want, and haue lacke of water for to drinke, and were inforced to dreſſe their meate with ſalt water, ſo that no man of that Fleete had then allowaunce of water to drinke, more then one pinte a day. Howbeit vpon the Friday being the eleuenth day of January, in the yeare of our Lord God. 1498. drawing neere the lande, they went out in their boates along the Coaſt to take viewe thereof, and ſo paſſing by the ſame, they ſaw many Nigroes with a great company of women, all of them of great ſtature, which went along the Sea ſide, and when the Captain generall ſaw and perceiued, that they ſhewed themſelues to bee a people, flexible to ciuilitie, and of a quiet diſpoſition, hee commaunded one of our men called Martin Alonſo, who coulde ſpeake manye languages of the Nigroes, and one other with him, to leape out on Lande, and to goe to them, which immediatelye thoſe two perſons did: and at theyr comming to the ſame blacke People, they were of them verye well receyued, and eſpeciallye of the chiefe perſon or Gouernour of the ſame, to whome, our Generall viewing his and theyr manner of courteſie, forthwith ſent a Jacket, a payre of Hoſe, and a Cappe, being all redde, and a Bracelet of Copper, of which things he was very glad, and rendered great thankes to the Generall for the ſame, ſaieng: that with a verye good will, hee ſhoulde haue of gifte, anye thing he would deſire or had neede off, that was to be had in his Countrey. All which, Martin Alonſo, vnderſtanding theyr language tolde to the Generall, who was verye ioyfull that by

A reward ſent by the Generall to a Nigro.

Digitized by Google

by his interpretation, those people and ours might of each other haue vnderstanding, giuing also at that instant license to ỹ same Alonso & one moe of our men to goe with those people for one night to their Towne, at the request of the same gouernour, who verie earnestly required the same. The gouernour then apparelled himselfe with those Garments which the Generall gaue him, and with great pleasure gaue commaundement to many of his chiefe men to goe before and receiue him when he came to their towne: The people as they went viewed and beheld with greate pleasure and admiration those vestures which our General had giuen him, clapping their hands for ioy thereof, which manner of gladsome reioysing, they vsed three or foure times, before they came to their towne: And after their entrance therein, they went round about the same, to the end all the people and inhabitants thereof, might see and behold those giuen garments and straunge araie: Which being done, the gouernour entered into his house where he commaunded Alonso and his companion to be well lodged, and gaue to them for their supper a Hen euen such as ours bee, and Pap made of Mylyo, which is a kinde of graine of a yeelow colour; whereof also they make bread: This night repaired many Nigroes to their lodging to see them: And the next daie after the gouernour sent them to their ships with certaine Nigroes of his laden with hens, for the Captaine Generall, who rendered thanks for the same, and required by his interpretour, those Nigroes, to saie vnto their Gouernour, that he now saw and perceiued him to be a noble man, or king of that countrie, & forasmuch as the Generall, and the rest of our men in those fiue daies wherein they had houered vpon and viewed that Coast had no manner damage done or offered them: and saw both many quiet and gentle people there, & also many noble men, he gaue to this land an apt name, calling it, The Land of good people, in the Towne where Martyn Alonso was, they? houses bee made a ✝ straw, and verie well furnished within: The women e more in number, then the men:

Digitized by Google

for in the companie of the women there are no more but twentie men: They carrie with them long bowes with arrowes and darts of yron, and vpon their armes and legges they weare many wacelets of Copper, and some peeces of them in their haires. Also they carrie daggars, the hafts or handles of Yewter, and the sheathes of Iuorie, so that it is manifest, that they haue in that Countrie plentie of copper and tinne. Moreouer they haue great store of Salt, which they make of Salt water, carrieng the same from the Sea side in gourdes, and putting it into certeine Caues where they make the Salt: These kinde of people were so gladde of the linnen that our men carried with them, and brought with them thether, that they gaue for one shirt much Copper. They also were so quiet amongest our men, that they brought them water to their boates from a riner which was two Crosbowe shotte from the place where our men toke in the same, which riuer they call Rio de Cobre: From this place our Fleete departed the fiftenth daye of Januarie, and going vnder saile, did discouer land of an other countrie which lyeth very lowe, wherein were trees verie high and thicke, and so proceeding forward they discouered or found a riuer which was verie open at the entering of the same: And for that the Generall thought it necessarie to reknowledge or haue notice of that Countrie, & there to learne whether they might heare anye newes or intelligence of the Indias, hee commaunded to come to an Anker, which was vpon the Thursday, being seauen daies before the end of Januarie, and the same night he with his brother Nicholas Coello entered the riuer, and at the dawning of the daye, did well perceiue the lande to bee lowe and couered with water, hauing trees of great height, and thicke loaden with sundrie sortes of fruites: Our men then beholding the land, which was verie pleasaunt, they sawe also certeine boates, at that present comming towardes them, with men in the same, whereof the Generall was very glad, supposing vpon sight of the people and view of their countrie, in that manner, which they had some know-

A newe land discouered of curteous Moores

Digitized by Google

knowledge and experience of the Sea, that therefore they were not farre of from the Indias, or at least wise could not then goe far, but they should heare newes of the same: when the people with their boates came neere to our Fleete, our men perceiued they were all blacke people, of good stature, howbeit all naked, sauing their priuie members, which wer couered, with little peeces of linnen made of Bombast or Cotten, they came neere and entered into our ships without any feare, and in such sorte vsed themselues towardes our men, as though they had ben of long acquaintance and familiaritie with them: They were very well receiued of our people of the Fleet, the Captaine Generall commanded the same, and also that there should be giuen vnto them certeine little Bels & other things, & he talked with them by signes, for they did not vnderstand any of Martin Alonso his languages, nor any other interpretour y our men thē had: After this their good interteinment they departed, and as it seemed well liking of the same, they and many others with them afterward returned in their boates to our ships, bringing vnto them such victuals, as their countrie yeldeth: They in appearance shewed themselues verie well contented with our men, & as they came by water, so also did many others of those people repaire thether by land, & amongst them women of indifferent good beautie, especially y young maides, which goe after the same sort, that the men doe: They haue in their lips three holes, and in euery hole a peece of tinne, which they esteeme as a thing very gallant and gaye: They tooke with them certeine of our men to make merrie at a countrie towne there neere hand, and where they fet water for our ships. And after the three daies space that our Generall was in that riuer, there came of curtesie two noble men of that countrie to visit him in their boates, whose apparell was none other, then of the rest, sauing the peeces of lynnen wherewith they couered their members, were farre greater, then those the common sorte vsed, and one of them ware vpon his head a tucke or kerchiefe wrought with silke, and the other had a night cap of greene Satten.

The curtesie & apparel of the noble mē of this Countrie.

The

Digitized by Google

The Captaine Generall seeing those men somewhat addicted to cleanlinesse was verie glad thereof, receiued them in courteous maner, and commaunded to giue them meate, and moreouer he gaue them apparell and certeine other things, but it appeared by their countinaunces they smallye or nothing at all esteemed thereof: Howbeit while they remained in our Shippes, the Generall perceiued by tokens and signes which a young man that came with them there shewed, that their countrie was farre of thence, and that they had seene as great Ships as ours were, whereof he greatly reioyced, and all our people in like manner as then verely hoping and thereby coniecturing, that the Indias were neere to that place: which their hope and coniecture was also farre the more augmented and confirmed, for that after those noble men were gone to shore, they sent to the Fleete certeine linnen cloth to sell, which was made of Cotten, vpon which also were certeine marks of Okar, in respect of which good newes, and intelligence heere found, and likely to ensue, the Captaine Generall gaue to this riuer a name, calling it, The Riuer of the good tokens or marks, and caused there a marke to be erected, calling the same San Raphael, according with the name of the Shippe wherein hee was, and went that voyage. And forasmuch as he perceiued by the signes of the young man, that those noble men inhabited a Countrie farre thence, and that they had seene Shippes as greate as ours, hee thereby and vpon other coniectures gathered, that their Countrie was neere to the Indias, and so consequently that the Indias was farre of from that riuer where our ships then lay: wherefore consulting hereof, it was by him and the other Captaines then determined vpon, that all the shippes should be brought on ground, which determination was executed accordingly, & the same ships repaired, dressed, and trimmed in all points needfull and necessarie: In doing whereof they spent and passed ouer two and thirtie daies, in which time our men sustained and passed ouer great troubles and tormentes of minde, by occasion of a sickenesse there happened amongest them,

This sickenes is called the Scurfe

Digitized by Google

them, which was thought to growe by meanes of the aire of that countrie, for that the hands and feete of so many of them, and also their gums in such sorte did swell, that they could not eate, and the same so rotted, that the stinke which came out of their mouthes was so great and pestiferous, that none could abide the sauour therof, with this pestilent infection & sickenes our men were greatly discomfited, & many of them dyed thereof, which also put the rest of the companie in greate feare and perplexitie of minde: Yea, and further would haue increased and aggrauated their griefes of bodye and sorrowes of minde, were it not that one De Gama a man of good nature and condition had taken speciall care and vsed greate dilligence, for the recouerye of their healths, and putting them in comfort: who continually visited the sicke, and liberally departed vnto them such wholesome and medicinable things, as for his owne bodye hee had prouided, and carried with him, through whose good counsell giuen, great pains taken, and franke distribution of that he had, many of our men were recouerd, which would otherwise haue died, and all the rest thereby were greatly recomforted.

¶ How the Captaine Generall with all his Fleete, came to the Iland of Mōsambicke. Chap. 5.

THe Fleet being furnished and prouided of all things necessarie, the Captaine Generall then mindfull of his voyage, departed thence, vpon the Saturday, being the 24. day of Februarie, and the same day, and all the night following, for that he was inticed and to auoide the shore, made way into the sea: and vpon Sunday by Euensong time, our men discried three Ilands a Seaward, all of them being but little or small, they were distant one from another foure leagues: Two of them were replenished with great woods, & the third was plaine, to arriue to these Ilands the Generall was not willing, for

three smal llands discouered not vvorth the entering.

Digitized by Google

that he sawe or conjectured no cause to occasion the same, & therefore he still kept the sea, staieng & comming to an ankor alwaies as the night approched, which manner of course & order he vsed and continued the space of fiue daies: And vpon the thursday being the first day of March towards euening, our men came within sight of foure Ilands, whereof two were neere the shore, and the other two a Seabord, & for that they would not that night fall with them, they still kept the Sea, minding to passe betweene them, as indeede they did: Whereupon the Captaine Generall determined & commaunded that Nicholas Coello, by reason his ship was lesse then the others, should go first, & so going vpon the friday within a certein harbour, which was betweene ỹ maine land & one of the Ilands, the said Nicholas milled ỹ channell, and ranne on ground, which daunger when our other ships sawe comming after, they did cast then about, & went backe, and as they were returned, they perceiued comming out of that Iland, seauen or eight little boates vnder saile, being distant from Nicholas Coello a good league: At sight of those boates comming towards them, Nicholas Coello and those which were with him toke great pleasure, & for ioye gaue a great crye, and at their repaire to them Coello and they went to the General and saluted him, to whom the same Coello sayd: How say you sir, here is an other kinde of people: whereunto the Generall answered, that hee was very glad of that good Fortune, and therewith commanded to let them go a Seabord with their boates, for that his meaning was to beare with them to that Ilande from whence they came, and there to come to an Ankor, of purpose to vnderstand what land that was, & whether amongest those people, he might heare or haue anye newes or certeine intelligence of the Indias: yet notwithstanding ỹ generals cõmandement, they in their boats followed our ships, alwaies making signes and calling to our men, therein to stay and tarrie for them, wherefore the Captaine Generall, with the other Captaines came to an Ankor, and so they in their boates approched neere, and ranne to our shippe: And

then

Digitized by Google

they by view of their persons it appeared they were men of a good stature and somewhat blacke. They were apparelled in linnen cloth of Cotten, welted with sundry colours, some girdeled vnto their knees, and others carried the same vpon their shoulders as cloaks, and vpon their heads they weare a certeine kinde of tucks or kerchiefe somewhat wrought with silke and gold thrid. They haue swords and daggers as the Moores doe vse them, in their boates they brought with them their instruments called Sagbuts. These men being thus come to our ships, they forthwith came a bord the same with great opinion of assurance, euen as though they had knowne our men a long time, and immediatlye began to be conuersant, and very familiar with them, vsing their speaches which they vttered in the language of Algarauia, and would not be knowne they were Moores: The Generall commaunded to giue them meate, & they did both eate and drinke with a good wil, of whatsoeuer was giuen them: And being asked at commaundement of the General bylone Fernan Aluares (who could speake ỳ language) what land that was, they answered that it apperteined to a great king which was before, & holy that Iland was called Mō- The Iland of Monsā bick, vvith the tovvn of Mer- chandise.
sambicke, and the towne there full of Merchantes, which haue traficke with the Moores of the Indias, who bring thether siluer, linnen cloth, pepper, ginger, siluer ringes, many pearles, and rubie stones, and that out of another Countrie, which remained behinde, they doe bring them golde: Declaring further that if our men would enter into the Harbour there, they would bring them thether, and they should perceiue and see the truth, and more at large, touching those thinges they then gaue information of: The Generall hearing this, entered into counsell with the other Captaines, debating the matter thereof, and argued whether it were good to enter the Harbour, and see if those things were of truth, which those Moores had imparted to them, and also there to take some Pilottes to carrye them further, since they were nowe destitute of such: Vppon which consultation, it was there determined,

Digitized by Google

that Nicholas Coello ſhuld firſt make an aſſay & proue for enterance and ſounding of the barre, by reaſon his ſhip was the leaſt of the Fleete: which accordingly he forthwith did. And ſo going to enter he went and touched the point of the Iland, and therewith brake his helme, howbeit through God his goodneſſe, he periſhed not there although he was in great daunger and hazard thereof, for as he went vpon the point vnwares, ſo with quicke ſpeede and good fortune he gote of the ſame: Neuertheleſſe he perceiued and found ꝑ the barre was good to enter, and therfore he came to an anker, two crosbo we ſhot from the towne ſcituated in that Iland, which is in fifteene degrées towards ꝑ South, it hath a very good harbour, and alſo great plentie of the victuals of that countrie, the houſes of that towne be made of ſtraw, and the dwellers therein are Moores, which trade to Sofala in great ſhips, that haue no decks nor nailes, but are ſowed with Cayro, and their ſailes are of mats made of the leafe of a palme tree: ſome of them doe carrie with them compaſſes of Beane by which they doe gouerne, & they be ſquare, they haue alſo Seacards: with theſe Moores, the Moores of Indias haue trafficke, and with thoſe from the red ſea, by reaſon of the golde they haue there.

Cayro is the caske or rind of a nut they haue in ꝑ India called Caco, and vvith the ſame theſe ropes are made

When they ſawe our men, they ſuppoſed them to bee Turks, by reaſon of the knowledge they had of the Turks countrie, through intelligence of the Moores which dwel in the red ſea, they which were firſt in our ſhips went & tolde their Xeque (for ſo they call him alwaies that is gouernour of the towne) which was there for the king of Quiloa, vnder whoſe obeiſance this Iland was.

¶ How the Captaine Generall entered into the harbour of Monſambicke, and how the gouernour there, came to viſit him at his ſhips, making peace with him, and gaue him two Pilottes to carry him to Calicut, verely ſuppoſing our people to be Turkes.

Chap. 6.

The

Digitized by Google

The Xeque or Gouernour hauing knowledge of our comming, and that Nicholas Coello was come to an Anker in the Harbour, he verelye beleeued that they were Turkes or Mores of some other place, and therfore forthwith he came and visited him in his ships, accompanied with many apparelled in silke, whome Nicholas Coello receiued with great courtesie: but forasmuch as he nor any of his ship could speake their language, the Gouernour tarried not long, howbeit Coello vnderstoode very well, that the Gouernour deemed them to bee Mores, and therefore he gaue him a red Cappe, whereof hee made no accompt, he gaue him also certaine blacke beades, which he carried away in his handes, both which were giuen and taken for token of assurance betweene them: and when he should depart from our ship, he required by signes of Nicholas Coello to haue his boat to carrie him to lande, who gladly graunted the same, and sent therewith certaine of our men, which the Gouernour at his returne to lande, carried with him to his house, feasting and banketting them with Dates and other things, and sent by them to Nicholas Coello: a pot of Dates preserued, wherewith he feasted the Captaine Generall and his brother, after they had entered the Harbour.

Our men taken for Turks, by the Mores of Monsambicke

The Gouernour now perceiuing the rest of our shippes arriued in the Harbour, immediately sent to visite them, beleeuing they were Turkes, and presented them with many pleasant & delicate meates, demaunding also license to come and visite them himselfe. The Captaine generall returned for presents to him againe, certaine red hats, short gownes, corrall, balons of brasse, little hawkes bells, and many other things, all which (as the messenger reported, that carryed the same) he nothing esteemed, asking for what purpose those things were good, and demaunding why the Captaine sent him not Scarlet, as the thing which he chiefly desired. Notwithstanding he came and visited the Captaine Generall who hauing knowledge of his comming, commaunded the

Digitized by Google

to each of which was giuen thirtie Cruſones and a coate, euery Crowne woꝛth in money, fiue ſhillings, with this condition, and from that day foꝛward, that when the one of them would goe to ſhoꝛe, the other ſhould remaine in ſhip, foꝛ that our men would alwaies haue one of them on ſhipboꝛd, whileſt they remained in Harbour.

8. ¶How the Gouernour of Monſambicke, vnderſtanding that our Fleete was neither of the Turkes nor yet Moores, would haue taken and killed them, and how the Captaine generall vnderſtood thereof: and what further than followed. Cap. 7.

THeſe meetings and ſpeaches thus had, foꝛ aſſuraunce of friendſhip betweene them, & the concourſe of them being ended, and the Gouernour departed, yet then immediately after appeared, that thoſe Moꝛes hauing had ſuch company and long talke with our men had gathered and come to knowledge that they were Chriſtians, whereupon all foꝛmer good will and friendſhip of the Moꝛes, was now conuerted into woꝛath and furie, foꝛ they practiſed meanes to kill our men, and ſo to take the ſhips. The Gouernour had thereof conſulted and made pꝛoꝛiſion, foꝛ execution of their miſchieuous enterpꝛiſe, which had bene likely to haue taken place, and ſoꝛted to a ſoꝛrowfull hap and euent, had not the Almightie of his diuine goodneſſe, moued the heart of one of the Moꝛes, which was reteined foꝛ Pilot to diſcouer the ſame to the Captaine generall, who fearing leaſt thoſe Infidells ſhould ſodainlye indaunger him and his, foꝛ that they were manie in number, and with him were but a ſmall companye, did therefoꝛe determine to remaine no longer in that harbaur. And ſo vpon the Saterday, being the tenth daye of March, & ſeuen dayes after his arriuall there, he departed thence, and went with his ſhips into the Sea, and came to an Ankoꝛ harde by an Ilande

The Moores withdraw ther good wils knowing that we were Chriſtians

Digitized by Google

Iland in the same, which was one league from that of Monsambicke, and this was done, to purpose, that vppon Sunday, they would heare Masse on lande, confesse themselues, and receiue the Sacrament, which since their comming from Lixborne they had not done. After our shippes wer thus at an Anker, the Captain general then perceiuing the same to be in place of assurance so as the Moores should not burne them, (whereof before he was greatly afrayde) which now by their remoue was preuented and put out of doubt, he then determined to retourne to Monsambicke in his boate, to demaund the other Pilot that remayned on lande at their comming thence: and so leauing his brother with the Fleete in order and readinesse to come and succour him, if he should see him in daunger, he departed towardes Monsambicke carrieng with him Nicholas Coello in his boate and the other Pilot Moore. Going in this sort, they saw how there came bearing right with his boate, fiue boates with many armed Moores, hauing long bowes & arrowes, and also shieldes and speares, who when they sawe our men, beganne then to call vnto them, willing them to come to the harbour of their Towne. The Pilot Moore tolde the Generall what they meant by their signes and tokens they made, and gaue him counsell to retourne thether, for that otherwise the Gouernour woulde not delyuer the other Pilot which remained on the shore, at which his speach, the General was very angry, supposing he gaue that counsell, to the ende at their comming neere the shore, hee might escape and runne away, and therefore commaunded him to prison, and caused forthwith to shote at theyr boats with their Ordinaunce, which shot when Paulo de la Gama heard, and beleeuing it had bene some further matter of daungers to the General, then the cause thereof was indeed, he immediately came forwarde with the ship called Berrio vnder saile, which when the Nigroes perceiued, they fled, & made away with great hast, and so fast that the Captaine generall could not ouertake them, & therfore he returned with his brother to the other ships where they lay at Ankor.

Digitized by Google

The nert day the Generall, with all his men went on land, heard Maſſe, and receiued the Sacrament very deuoutlye, being the night before confeſſed: which being done, they all went aboord their ſhips, and made ſayle the ſame day. The Generall perceiuing no hope to remaine for recouerie of the other Pilot, which was on ſhore in Monſambicke, gaue then commaundement to releaſe him that was in the ſhip committed to priſon, (as before you haue heard, whome they carried with them on their voyage. This Pilot minded to be reuenged vpon the Generall, in ſtomacke of his impriſonment, determined to carry them to Quiloa, which was peopled all with Moores, and as it ſeemed, meant to informe the King of that place, that our ſhippes were of the Chriſtians, of purpoſe thereby to occaſion him to kill and deſtroy them all: and therefore ſubtillie to ſhadowe his wicked intent, he willed and perſwaded the Captaine generall, not to trouble himſelfe with the want of the other Pilot, for that he would carrie him to a great Iland, which was from thence one hundreth leagues, and inhabited as it were the one halfe by the Moores, and the other by Chriſtians, which alwaies were at wars the one with the other, from whence alſo he might furniſh himſelfe with Pilots to carry him to Calycut: But as the Captaine generall had good liking of thoſe ſpeaches, ſo yet gaue he no great credite to the man, neuertheleſſe he did promiſe him great giftes, if he did carrie him to that Countrey: and ſo went forward on his voyage with a ſmall winde. The Tueſdaye after, being within ſight of lande from whence he departed, hee was incalmed, which did indure Tueſdaye and Wenſdaye, the next night after with an Eaſterly winde being but ſmal, he made way, and went into the Sea, and vpon Thurſday in the morning, founde himſelfe and all the Fleete, foure leagues backe behinde Monſambicke, & ſo going vntill the Euening the ſame day, came then to an Anker hard to that Iland, where the Sunday next following he heard Maſſe. The winde thus being contrary to his purpoſe of Nauigation, he therefore remained in that place eight daies to wait

The other Moore Pilot in reuege practiſeth treaſo againſt the fleete

for

for such gals thereof as would serue to put him forward on his iourney: In which time repaired to our ships a white Moore which was a Minister of the Moores of Monsambicke, who comming on bord the ship of the Generall, declared that the Gouernour of the same Towne greatly did repent him of the breach of peace & friendship he had made with him, & that he would gladly renew the same againe & confirme it, & so remaine a friend. To whom the Generall returned aunswere by that messenger to this effect, that he would make no peace with the Gouernour, neither would he be his friend, vntill such time as he did send to him his Pilot whom he had hired and payed, with this aunswere, the Minister departed, and neuer came againe. The Captaine generall thus staieng still there, and expecting the the winde, there came to him after the Minister was gone, a certaine Moore, who brought his Sonne with him being a boye, and asked the Generall whether he woulde carrye them in his ships with him to the Citie of Mylynde, which he should finde in the course he shoulde keepe towards Calycut: Declaring that he would gladly goe with him, and returne to his Countrey which was neere to Meca, from whence he came as a Pilot, in a ship to Monsambicke, and therewith aduertised the Generall, not to tarry vppon any aunswere, from the Gouernour, who he was assured would make no peace with him, for that he was a Christian.

A white Moore repaireth to our ships.

The Captaine was verye gladdе of the comming of this Moore, for by him hee deemed, to gather sufficient matter of information and intellygence of the Straytes of the Redde Sea, and also of the Townes which lye and be scituated along the Coast, by the which he must sayle to Mylynde, and therefore he commaunded to receyue the same Moore and his Sonne into his Shippe, and by reason it was then somewhat late, and that they had no store of water, the Generall with the other Captaines determined to enter into the Harbour of Monsambicke, to take in there so much as they needed, appointing also there shoulde be great watch, for

Digitized by Google

preuention of the Mores, leaſt that they ſhould by anye deuice ſet on fire the ſhips. Upon this determination and being prepared accordingly, they proceeded and entered the harbour on thurſday, and when the night was come, they launched out their boates to go with them for water, for the Pilot of Monſambicke informed the Generall, that it was within the firme lande, offering to bring him to the ſame. Wherevpon taking the Pilot with him, he departed about midnight to goe thether, hauing Nicholas Coello in his cõpany, and leauing Paulo de la gama in charge of the ſhips. Being come to the place where the Pilot informed the water to be, it could not ſo be found, for he no doubt, went more to make eſcape and runne awaye, then to perfourme what before he promiſed, but whether that he was amazed with imagination of eſcape, and ſo could not finde it, or that of mallice (ſince he could not run away) he would not finde it, he cauſed them to ſpend that night without attaining the purpoſe of their repaire thether, wherefore the day light appearing, and ſeing they could not finde the water, the Generall would remaine no longer, hauing but a ſmall company of men with him ther, and fearing leaſt the Mores wold ſet vpon him, did therefore determine to goe to his ſhips, of purpoſe to fetch more men, and ſo if néd were to fight with his enimies, knowing alſo he ſhould farre better finde the water by day then by night. So hauing bene at his ſhips, and there furniſhed his boates with more force of men and armour, he retourned to ſhore ward againe, carrieng with him the Pilot of Monſambicke, and hauing alſo Nicholas Coello in his companye as before to take in water. And when they drew neere to the ſame, the Pilot ſeing that hée by no meane, or deuice coulde runne awaye, did then forthwith ſhew them the water, which was harde by the ſhore ſide, where alſo then were in ſight the number of twentie Mores ſkirmiſhing with their dartes, and ſhowing as though they were appointed there for the purpoſe and wold defende the water againſt ſuch as would enterprize to fetch or take any therof.

The

Digitized by Google

The manner whereof when our Generall sawe, he caused to be shot off, three gunnes to force them to auoide & giue place in that grounde, so as our men might leape forth of their boates and land without resistance: The Moores amazed & afrighted with cracke and shot of ỹ Ordinance, ran away and hid themselues in certein bushes, and so our men quietly landed and toke in fresh water, and a little before ỹ sunne set arriued at their ships, where they found the companie there disquieted in minde, for that a Nigroe of Iohn Cambrayes, Pilot to Paulo de la Gama, was that day run away to the Moores, whereof when the General vnderstood, he was very sad and sorrowfull for the same, since he was a Christian: Vppon the griefe and sorrow hereof he remained there Fridaie following: Vpon the Saturday, being the xxiiii. daye of March, and the euen of the Annunciation of our Lady, early in the morning appeared vpon the shore side a Moore right ouer against the Fleete, who cried out with a lowde and shrill voice, saieng, that if our men wold haue water, they should nowe come for the same thether, where they should finde such as would inforce them to returne. The Captaine Generall perceiuing how small account they made of him, remembring also the iniury done him in not deliuering the Pilot, and therwith hauing fresh in memorie the losse and running away of the Nigroe, his Pilots seruant, did thereupon grow into some choler, and so determined to shote of the ordinaunce of his ships, into the towne of his enimies, thereby to be reuenged vpon the same for the iniuries done him, by the inhabitants thereof; and this his determination, he imparted to his Captaines, who hauing liking of the same, yelded thereunto, and immediatly imbarked themselues in their boates, arming the same with such men as they had, and so comming before the towne, and against the same, there were Moores along the shore, which had made a pale of bords so thicke, that our men could not perceiue who was behinde the same. And betweene that pale or defence and the sea, vppon the shore there was one hundreth Moores, armed with Targets,

The Moores runne away at the cracke of the ordinaunce

Digitized by Google

ſhields, darts, bowes, arrowes, & ſlings, who ſo ſoone as our boates came within compaſſe or reatch of their ſlings, began to ſend forth of the ſame ſtones at our men, who immediatly anſwered them again with ſhot of Ordinance, through meanes whereof they left the waters ſide, retiring within their impaled defence, which was preſently after beaten downe with our ordenance, & the enimies running to their towne, left behinde them two of their companie ſlaine in that place: the defence thus broken downe, and the ſame all carried away, the Captaine Generall with his men returned to dinner, in which time it was ſtraunge to ſee howe the Moores ran awaie by land from that towne to another, with ſ feare they had of our men, and from thence they went by water to another place, which was on the other ſide. After dinner our men went with their Captains to ſee whether they could take any Moores, verely beleeuing that by taking of ſome, they ſhuld for the ſame haue reſtitution of Cambraies Nigro that was ranne away as you haue heard before: And moreouer they thought to recouer two Indians which the Pilot Moore tolde the General were captiues in Monſambicke. In this iourney onely Paulo de la Gama did take foure Moores in a boate: And although ther were other boats wherin many Moores were, yet could they not be taken, for making haſt to the ſhore & atteining the ſame, they ran away, leauing their boats as a pray to our men, who found in the ſame much linnen cloth of cotten, and alſo bookes of their lawe of Mahoma, which the Generall commaunded to bee ſafely kept: And albeit he went that day along and before the town in his boate, as other his Captaines did in like manner in theirs, yet could not they procure anie talke or ſpeach with anye of the Moores of the towne, and to goe on ſhoare he durſt not, for that he had but few men in number with him, wherefore for that time hee departed thence: and the next day returned to ſhoare to take in water, which without anye reſiſtaunce was done. Nowe beeing without all hope to recouer the Nigro and the two Indians, the generall then determined to depart without them, howbeit before his departure, he ment to viſit the town of Monſambick, & the dwellers therein, with ſome ſufficient reuenge, by ſending to the ſame ſuch meſſengers, as thereby they might deeme him their mortall enimy, through the offence they had giuen him: wherefore vpon the munday following hee went before the towne of the Moores with his Ordinaunce, and ſhooting into the ſame, deſtroied it in ſuch ſorte as the people thereof were inforced to abandon the ſame, and flye into an Ilande within the country. And ſo vpon the Tewſday being xxvii. daie of March, our Fleete waied Ankor and departed from the Towne of Monſambicke, and ſo going forwarde came to an Ankor hard by two little rocks of Saint George, for ſo they named it after they came thether, where they remained, for that the winde

the town of Monſambick batte red from the Fleete

winde was contrarie to their purpose: Neuertheless hauing, after a small winde they departed, howbeit the same was so small, and the currents there so great that they were cast backward.

How the Captaine Generall after his departure from Monsambicke, went towards the citie of Quiola, how hee lost himselfe going to the Iland of Mombassa, & how the ship called S. Raphael stroke vpon the Flats, the which now haue the same name. Cap. 8.

THe Captaine Generall following his voiage, and being very glad, that they had found, that one of the foure Moores which Paulo de la Gama toke in the boate was a Pilot, & could carry them to Calicut, vpon the Sunday being the first daye of Aprill, came to certeine Ilands which were very neere to the shore, to the first whereof they gaue a name, calling it the Iland of the Asotado, which they so named, for that they there did whippe the Pilot Moore of Monsambicke, by commaundement of the Generall, as well for that he had told them those Ilands were firme land, as also before that he wold not shew the Generall the water at Monsambick in the night when they sought for the same as before is declared: and therefore now taking him with the lie, as informed of those Ilands, ỹ Generall was verye angrie with the Pilot, supposing as it was likely, that he did carrie them thether, of intent the ships should be cast away amongst the same: The Moore being cruellye whipped confessed ỹ indeed he did cary & train them thether of purpose they should there haue perished, and bene cast vpon the daungers and rockes of the Ilands: These Ilands were so manye and so neere together scituated, that they coulde hardlye bee discerned one from another, which when the Generall perceiued, he made into the Seaward, and vpon the Fridaye which was the fourth daye of Aprill, made his way to the Northwest, & before the noone tide of the same, had sight of a great land, and of two Ilandes neere to the same, about which, were many shoels: now being come nere to ỹ shore, ỹ pilots Moores did reknowledge ỹ same, howbeit they said ỹ the Iland of the christians is that of Quiloa, which was behind or a ferne vs 3. leagurs, wherwith the generall was much grieued, beleeuing ỹ certeinly they were Christians as the Pilots had informed him, and that they had willingly lost their course, for that the shippes should not arriue at that place. The Pilottes shaddowing their treason made shew of a

The Iland of asotado & vvhy so called

rea-

Digitized by Google

reaſonable ertide, ſaieng, that as the winde was greate, ſo were the currents ſwift, by reaſon whereof the ſhippes hai further made ſaile then they thought for: But the truth was indeede, that they more ſorrowed their miſſing and paſſing by the Iland where they informed to be Chriſtians, then did our Captaine Generall: For they were verely in hope to haue ben reuenged ther vpon our men by death of them all: But GOD beholding the daunger and perill meant towards them, of his diuine goodneſſe and mercye deliuered them from the ſame, and that by a great miracle: For if our men had gone thether, not one of them had eſcaped with lyfe, ſince the Generall hauing ſuch a beliefe & opinion, that there were Chriſtians in that Iland (as the Pilot had tolde him) would no doubt haue gone preſently on land at his arriuall there, and ſo thereby runne headlong into a place where he and his people ſhould haue bene put to ſlaughter: The Generall thus ſorrowing the miſſe of that Iland, for that he ſuppoſed there to haue found Chriſtians, and the Pilots Moores in chafe with themſelues for that they had miſſed their courſe thether for purpoſe afore ſaid, it was then on each part determined, to goe back and aſſaie to finde the ſame: neuertheleſſe although they earneſtly bent themſelues to attaine vnto that deſired Iland, and ſpent that daye in trauell to winne their purpoſe therein, yet coulde they not preuaile thereto: For ſtill the winde was ſo contrarie, and the currents ſo great, as doe what they could, they failed of their wills, and were put off from arriuall there, which no doubte was done by Gods prouidence, and of his meere fauour and goodneſſe towards our men: as not willing they ſhould receiue anie daunger, or ſuſteine crueltie, or loſſe of lyfe, amongeſt thoſe Infidels, and therefore miraculouſly he preſerued our people from the effect and ſequele of the malice of thoſe two Pilots of the Moores of Monſambicke, which had imagined in their mindes, and trauailed to bring to finall and execution their diuelliſh intent: The Captaine generall and the other Captaines thus toſſing vp and downe, to and fro, as well with their ſhips, as alſo in their

mindes

windes, determined to beare towards the Ilande of Mombassa, in which as those two Pilots gaue information, were two Townes, peopled and inhabited as well with Moores as Christians: (which instructions these Pilots gaue, to the intent to deceiue our men, and to traine them thether, of purpose there to kill them, for that in deede that Ilande was altogether and wholly inhabited by Moores, as in lyke manner all that Coaste is,) and therefore vnderstanding that from thence to Mombassa are seauentie seauen leagues, they made way to goe thether, and being then towards Euening, they sawe a great Ilande situated towards the South, in which the Moores Pilots sayde there were two Townes, one of Christians, and the other of Moores, as aforesayd. Thus they sayd and inuented to the intent to bring our men in opinion, and make them beleeue that there were in that Land, and those Coasts many Christians. In this sort our ships going vnder saile, certayne dayes, the ship called Saint Raphael by fortune one morning two houres before daye light, came on ground vpon certaine shoells, two leagues from the firme lande, and as she strake on ground, they within made signes to the other ships to take heede and beware, whereupon they shot by the shoells and came to an Anker, launching out their boats to giue succour to Pablo de la Gama Captaine in the Raphael, and perceiuing when they came to the same, that the water did ebbe, the Generall was meruailous glad thereof, for then he well knew, that at the next flood the ship would be afloate againe, so that now he lost the feare and ielousie he had conceiued, vpon the doubt he had that she was lost. Thus recomforted with the certaintie they saw of ỹ safetie of the ship, they forthwith layed into the sea many ankers. By this time it was daye lyght, and after that it was a lowe water, she then remained drye vpon the shore being a Sandie ground, which was the cause she toke no harme, by striking vpon the same. Our men placed their Ankers which were layd forth right ouer against themselues, and walked vpon the Sandes whilest the Ebbe endured.

Another deuise of the Moores to destroy our men vvithall

Digitized by Google

So ſtaieng for the floud, and beholding and viewing that Ilande, ſo farre as they coulde ſee, they gaue for name to thoſe Sandes, the Shoells of Saint Raphael, in reſpect of the name, the ſhippe there ſo hazarded did beare. And to certayne great Ilandes and Hilles which were within the firme Land, directly ouer againſt thoſe ſhoells or ſands, they gaue the name of The Hills and Ilandes of saint Raphael, vpon the ſame conſideration.

The ſhoels of S. Raphael.

The ſhippe thus being dreye, our men ſawe two boates, and Moores of that Country in the ſame comming towards them, to ſee our ſhippes, bringing manie ſweete Drenges, farre better then thoſe of Portingale, and gaue the ſame to our men, ſaieng alſo to the Generall, that in no wiſe hee ſhould feare anye damage that coulde enſue to the ſhippe on grounde, for that when it were full Sea, ſhe woulde then be on floate agayne, ſo as at will and pleaſure ſhe ſame might paſſe on the intended voyage thereof: with which ſpeaches the Generall was very glad not onelye for the good comfort they gaue him, but alſo in that they came in ſo good ſeaſon and time opportune, and therefore he gaue them certayne giftes, which they accepted with manye thankes, and certayne of them vnderſtanding that our Fleete intended their Courſe to Mombaſſa, they deſired the Generall to carry them with him thether, who graunted their requeſts, permitted them to abide and remayne with him, the others retourning from our Fleete to their Countrey. And when it was a full Sea, the ſhippe before on ground was afloat, and ſo came off from the Sandes, whereupon the Captaine generall returned, and proceded on his way, with all his Fleete.

¶ The

¶ The description of the Iland and Citie of Mombassa, and how the Captaine generall arrived there, and what was the sequell that hapned him after he came thether. Chap. 9.

The Generall following this voyage, did vpon the Saterday being the seauenth day of Aprill, about the going downe of the Sunne the same daye come to an Ankor without the Barre of the Iland of Mombassa, which is harde by the firme lande, and is verye plentie of victualls, that is to saye, Millyo, Rice, and Cattell, as well great as lyttle, but all well growen and fat, chiefly their sheepe, which be all without tayles. Also they haue manye Hennes: Moreouer, the Ilande is verye pleasaunt, haning many Orchards, wherein are planted and are growing, great store of hearbes, & many sorts of fruites: that is to saye, Pomegranets, Figges of the Indias, Orenges both sweete and sower, Lymons, and Cidrons, and in the same are manye excellent good waters. In this Ilande there is a Citie, bearing the selfe same name of the Ilande, being in foure degrees on the South side, it is a verye great Citie, placed and scituated vppon an Hill, which also is a Rocke, whereupon the Sea doth beate, so that it cannot bee vndermined.

At the entering into the Portes or Hauen there is a Marke: and at the enteraunce vppon the Barre, there is planted or builded a lyttle Fort, lowe and neere to the water. The most parte of the houses in this Citie, are builded with lyme and stone, with the loftes thereof wrought with fine knottes of Plaister of Paris, the streetes therein are verye fayre. They haue a King of themselues, and the dwellers or inhabitaunts of the same are Moores, whereof some bee white, and some browne of coulour, both men and women: it appeareth they are good men on horsebacke.

Digitized by Google

They goe gallantly arayed, eſpecially the women, which go apparelled in gownes of ſilke, and be decked and garnithed with Jewells of golde and pꝛecious ſtones. In this Citie is great trade of all kindes of Marchandize. There is alſo a good Harbour, where alwayes are manye ſhippes lieng at Road, and from the firme land commeth thether great plentie of Honnie, Ware and Iuorie, the Captaine Generall thus come to the Barre of this Citie, did not then enter forthwith, for that it was almoſt night when he came to an Ankor. But he commaunded to put forth the flagges, and to toll their ſhippes, reioycing and making great mirth, for that their good fortune, and hope they conceyued, that in that Iſlande there dwelled manye Chriſtians, and that the next daye they ſhould heare Maſſe on the ſhore. Moreouer they were greatly comforted, as hauing ſuch confidence, that in this place they might and woulde cure and heale all ſuch as were then ſicke amongeſt them, as in truth were, almoſt all that were there preſent, albeit in number but fewe, for all the others were dead. Yet ſuch as remayned and had eſcaped the ſickneſſe and diſeaſes paſt, and were not dead of the great infirmities and troubles before in this voyage chaunced vnto them. Being thus at an Ankor, and the night almoſt approched, our men ſaw about an hundred men in a great Barcke, euery one of them hauing a Sworde and a Target, who at their comming to our ſhippes, woulde haue entered therein with all theyr weapons: howbeit the Generall would not conſent thereto, neither permitted he anye more to enter then foure of them, and thoſe alſo without weapon, declaring to them in their language that they ſhoulde pardon him ſince he was a ſtranger, and therefore coulde not tell whom he might truſt, and vnto thoſe whom he gaue licenſe to enter aborde his ſhip, he gaue good and gentle entertainment, banketting the ſame with ſuch Conſerues as they had, (whereof thoſe Moores did well eate) willing them not to deeme euill of him, for his denyall of theyr enterance in manner aforeſayde, where-vnto they anſwered, that theyr comming

Certaine of the inhabitants of this citie came aboorde the ſhip.

Digitized by Google

comming then was to see him as a rare and new thing in that their countrie, and that he shoulde not meruaile to see them bring theyr weapons, since it was the custome & vse of the same to carrie them as well in peace as in the time of warre: also they further declared vnto the generall, that the king of Mombassa did vnderstand of his comming, and for that it was so neere night, he had not then sent to visit him, howbeit the next day he would, and that he was as glad of his arriuall there, so also would he be more glad to see him, yea, and to giue him spices to load his ships, furthermore, they informed him that there were many Christians, which liued by themselues in that Iland: whereupon the Generall was not onely ioyfull, but also fullye perswaded that their report thereof was true and vnfeined, since the same was agreeable, and accorded with the information and talke of the two Pilottes, nevertheless he carried some sparke of iealousie in his head, and for all their faire speaches and figured talke, he wisely imagined ỳ those Moores, came to see whether they might, by anie traine take one of our ships, wherein he gessed vpon the truth, for certeinly their comming then was onely for that purpose, as afterward it was made apparant. For most true it was ỳ the king of Mombassa did know and had perfect intelligence that we were Christians, and also what we had done in Monsambicke, & therefore he practised meanes to be reuenged of vs, by taking our ships and killing of vs, wherefore prosecuting his wicked intent therein, the next daie following, which was Palme sundaie, he sent to our Generall certeine white Moores, which declared to him ỳ their king was very glad of his comming thether, and that if he wold come into his harbour, he would liberally giue him all things he stode in nede off, and for assurance of the same he sent him a ring, a sheepe, and many sweete Orenges, Cidrons, and Sugar canes, giuing also these Moores instructions to tell him further, that they were Christians, and that in the Iland were many christened people: All which they did in such sorte counterfaite, and with so great and deepe dissimulation, that

Syvete practises of sowre treason.

Digitized by Google

our men thought verely they were Chriſtians: whereſore the Generall receiued them very well, and gaue them certeine giftes, ſending to the King greate thankes for his gentle and liberall offer, ſaieng further, that the nert day he woulde come nérer in: Hée ſent alſo to the King a braunch of Coꝛall verye fine, and foꝛ moꝛe aſſurance to confirme the ſame, he ſent with thoſe Moꝛes two of our men, which were baniſhed perſons, and were carried of purpoſe to bée aduentured in ſuch like reſpect of daunger, oꝛ to be lefte and putte on ſhoꝛe in ſuch places, where it ſhoulde be thought good to vnderſtande ſomewhat, and then to returne and be taken in againe, when our men and the two Moꝛes were gone: and come to the ſhoꝛe, there met them a multitude of people to ſée them, all which went with them and viewed them, euen to the kings Pallace, where our men béeing entered, they paſſed thꝛough thꝛée doꝛes befoꝛe they came where the king was, at each of which there was a Poꝛter attending, hauing euerye one of them a ſwoꝛde in his hand. They found the King but in ſmall eſtate, neuertheleſſe hée receiued them verye well, and commaunded that in the ſelfe ſame companie of the Moꝛes with whome they came, they ſhould be ſhewed the Citie, and carried about the ſame in going and viewing whereof, they ſawe in the ſtréetes many men Priſoners & in yꝛons, but becauſe our men vnderſtode not their language, noꝛ they had any vnderſtanding of ours, there was no queſtion demaunded by our two meſſengers, what Priſoners thoſe were, howbeit they beléeued the ſame to bée Chriſtians, foꝛ that our Generall was infoꝛmed by the two Pilottes, and the Kinges meſſengers, (as you haue befoꝛe hearde) that there were in that Ilande ſuch Chriſtians, which alſo hat warres with the Moꝛes.

Merchãts of the Indias yvhich are Chriſtians

Moꝛeouer they carryed our men to the Merchauntes houſe of the Indias, which were Chriſtians, who hauing infoꝛmation that ours alſo were people Chriſtened, ſhewed themſelues to be ioyfull thereof, both imbꝛacing and banketting them, ſhewing them painted in a Paper, the fi-

gure

ture of the holy Ghoſt, the which they did worſhippe, and before them made their Prayers vppon their knees, and that with ſuch a counteuaunce, and ſhew of greate deuotion, as though they were ſuch men inwardlye indæde, as in appearaunce outwardlye they then pretented, and made ſhewe off: Furthermore, the Moores then ſolde our men by ſignes, that manye other Chriſtians as thoſe were, did dwell in another place farre from thence, and therefore they would not carrie them thether: howbeit they ſayde, that after our Captaine Generall were come into the Porte or Harbour, they ſhoulde goe and ſée them.

All theſe thinges thoſe wilie people, ſhewed and imparted to our men, of purpoſe to deceiue them and to allure them to come within that Porte, where they were determined to deſtroy and kill them all.

After they had ſéene the Citie, they were then brought to the preſence of the King, who commaunded to ſhew them Pepper, Ginger, Cloues, and Wheate, giuing them of euerye ſorte thereof ſome portion to be carryed and ſhewed the Generall, and ſent him worde by his meſſenger, that of all thoſe commodities he hadde greate ſtore, and woulde giue him his loading if that hee woulde. Alſo that he had Golde, and Siluer, Amber, Waxe, Iuorye, and other riches, in ſo greate plentie, that hee ſhoulde haue and finde there whatſoeuer hee woulde for ſmall valour and priſes, then in anie other place.

This Meſſage was brought to our Captaine Generall vppon Mondaye, who hauing ſéene the Spices, and hearing of the Kinges promiſe, to furniſhe him the ſame, and to lade him therewith, was meruailous gladde of that offer; and ſo much the rather, was hee confirmed in opinion of good lucke, for that our two baniſhed men, hadde gathered ſuch intelligence, and made him ſo full and good declaration of the People, Citie, and Lande there, and chiefelye of the two Chriſtians, they founde in the Houſe of the Merchauntes of the Indias.

Where-

Digitized by Google

Wherefore he & his Captaines immediatly aduised themselues thereof, and so entering into counsel for the same, it was by them thought good, to come within the port, and to accept the offer of Spices, and afterwarde to goe on their voiage to Calicut, where if they could not haue the like, they would remaine content, with that they should haue in this place, and thus hauing concluded vppon these pointes, they determined to enter into the harbour the next daie: in this meane while came certeine Moores to our ships with so great quietnesse, and humilitie, and with such shew and appearance of friendlinesse and loue, as though they had ben of long acquaintance and familiaritie with our men: The next day following in the morning, ỳ flood being come, the Generall commanded to take vp their Ankers, mindings to enter the harbour, but God not willing that he and the rest should enter into that present mischiefe, nor to ende their liues in that place (as the Moores had determined they should haue done) did therefore cause and prouide the meane that preuented that perill, and inought their safetie: for when the Generalls ship had weyed her Anker, and was going to enter the port, she strake vpon a shoel that was aferne the same, which hap when he perceiued, and fearing he should cast himselfe away, he then forthwith commanded, to let fall his Anker: in like sort did the other Captaines also: which chance when the Moores that were in the ships sawe, & that the Generall was come to an anker, they then imagined that during that daye, they should not gette the fleete into the harbour, and therefore they ran to their boate, which they had on the ships side to goe to the Citie, at which instant also the Pilots of Monsumbicke, sailing a steerne the Admirall, tooke the water, and those of the boats tooke them in and carried them away with them, although the Generall called vnto them, requiring them to bring backe, and deliuer them to him againe: But when he sawe they would not so doe, then he apparantlye perceiued that ther was an euill meaning in their king and them, towards him and his, and that it was his great goodnesse and

God sent them fatherly checks to keepe thē frō vtter destructiō

fauour

Digitized by Google

fauour to giue him cause of feare, by happening vppon that shoell, thereby to preserue him from their treason imagined, and put in practise: Whis hauing declared to all his company, the opinion he conceiued of that which then before their eyes was done, and appeared to be deuised and wrought against them, he then commaunded the night being come, to giue some torments or torture, to two of the Moores, which he brought captiues with them from Monsambicke, thereby to see whether they had practised any treason, and to inforce them to open and disclose the same: which commaundement being obserued, and put in execution, by heating and dropping of bacon vppon their flesh; they immediately confessed, they had conspired treason, and that the Pilots toke the Sea, as fearing the same had ben disclosed: whereupon the Generall, altogether altered his minde and purpose of going into that Harbour. Neuerthelesse being vnquiet and greatly grieued at their falshood, he was desirous to vse lyke torture to another Moore captiue also: to make tryall whether he were of counsell and in consort with the rest.

But this Moore perceiuing preperation made for that purpose, did cast himselfe his hands being bound, into the sea, as in lyke manner another of them did, before it was days light. The secrecie of the mischiefe prepared, being thus come to apparaunt view, and so discouered, the Generall gaue great thankes to God, by whose only goodnesse, he and his company were delyuered from imminent death and slaughter amongst those Infidells, and therefore in contemplation and thankes giuing for the same, he and his company being aboord the Admirall, sayd the salue Regina.

After this being mindfull of their saftie, and fearing least the Moores would attempt some matter against them in the night time, they therefore ordained strong and diligent watch, commaunding euery man to watch armed: And here by the way is to be noted one thing, and that to bee meruayled at, which is this: That when our men came first before the Towne of Mombassa, all such amongest

Digitized by Google

them as then were ſicke, (which indeede were many) began then preſently to be whole; ſo that in this time of theyr great neceſſitie, and daunger, they felt and found themſelues ſound and ſtrong, which as it was paſt all hope and expectation of man, and farre aboue the common courſe of Nature, and operation of the ſame, ſo the more liuely it appeared to be the meruailous and ſupernaturall worke of God, and therefore miraculouſly done at this inſtant time of neceſſitie, when his diuine power was to be ſeene and extended, for the preſeruation of that poore diſtreſſed number, which then had their onely affiaunce in him. The watch thus prepared and ſet for that night, it fortuned that thoſe which watched in the ſhippe Berrio, felt the gabell of the ſame wagging, whereat an Anker lay into the Sea, and at the firſt they adiudged that the gabell had bene wagged or ſhaken by a kinde of Fiſh called a Tunnie whereof many were there about which be very great and good meate, but giuing better and more attentiue eare thereto, they then perceiued that their enimies were at the ſame, who in truth did ſwimme about the gabell, and were cutting of it with their woodknines or ſawchings, and hoping or rather verely knowing, that perfourming their enterprize thereof the ſhippe would runne a ſhore, and ſo both ſhe and our men in the ſame be caſt away and taken: For by any other deuiſe they coulde not accompliſh their willes, and therefore they practiſed this meane. Howbeit our men hauing diſcryed whereabout they were, preuented them, by crieng out and calling to the other ſhippes, ſhowing what was in doing, and willing them alſo to beware and loke to the ſame, whereupon they of the ſhippe Raphael, came preſentlye to their ſuccour and reſcew, finding ſome of their enimies amongſt the cheines of the tacklings of their formaſt, who perceiuing how they were diſcouered, ſodainly caſt themſelues vnder water, and with the others that were cutting the gabell of the ſhippe Berrio, fledde away ſwimming to certaine boates, which they had lyeng ſomewhat farre off, wherein (as our men afterward vnderſtode) were many

Tunnie good meate & plentifull in the coaſt of Mobaſſa.

Powres,

Digitized by Google

Moores, who taking them in, rowed fast awaye, and so returned to the Citie. The Wensday and Thursday following, our Fleete still remained there, about which in ỹ night time came the enimies in boates, which alwayes lay harde by the shore, from which some of them did swimme of purpose to espie, if by any meane they could cut a sunder the gabells of the Ankors, but our men obserued and kept such diligent and warie watch, that they could not preuaile, neuertheleſſe our men were greatlye troubled, and put in feare of burning their shippes. For truly it was to be meruayled at, that the Moores came not about the same in such shippes as they had, which if they had done, it had bene then lykely by all coniecture of man, that they should haue destroyed and killed vs all. It was coniectured that they beeing in feare of the Ordinaunce in our shippes, durst not giue attempt to set vppon the same by force, but whatsoeuer cause appeared in our sightes to bee a lette in that respect to them: It was most certayne in deede, that it was God his good will and fauour, to put their hearts in feare to deale with vs in anye forceable manner, whereby we might be preserued from the cruelties intended towardes vs.

¶ Heerein is contayned matter of the Citie of Mylinde, and how the Captaine generall came thether. Chap. 10.

The Captaine generall did willingly tarrie & remaine before Mombassa, the two daies as before is declared, of purpose to see if he could haue from thence two Pilots to carry him to Calicut, for that without them it was verye harde for him to goe thether, ỹ if, since

Digitized by Google

ſince our Pilots had no knowledge of that Countrey. But when he ſawe he coulde not haue anye there, he departed thence vpon Friday in the morning with a ſmall winde, and at the comming ouer the Barre, he lefte behinde him one of his Ankors, for his men were ſo wearied with bringing and hailing vp the reſt, that they coulde not waye vp the ſame, which afterward being found ther by the Moores, was carried to the Citie, and placed harde by the kings Pallaice, and remained there at what time Don Franco de Almeyda was the firſt Lord Preſident of the Indias: who when he toke the ſame towne from the Moores, found this Ankor there, as I ſhall declare in the ſecond Booke of this preſent Treatiſe. Being thus departed from Mombaſa and paſſing on their voyage, eight leagues beyonde the ſame, the Generall and his Fleete, through lacke of winde, came to an Ankor harde by the land in the night, and in the dawning of the daye, they diſcouered two Sambucos (which are little Pinnaces) vnder the lye, three leagues from the Fleete a Sea boord, which when the Generall ſawe, and being deſirous to haue ſome Pilots to carrie him to Calycut, he ſuppoſed he might be ſped of ſuch to ſerue his turne, if he could take thoſe ſmall boates or Pinnaces, and therfore waying his Ankors, he and the other Captaines went towards them, and purſued the ſame vntil Euenſong time, at which inſtant the Generall toke one of them, but the other ranne alande, from whence before it came. In this Pinnace which was ſo taken, were ſeauenténe Moores, amongſt which was one olde Moore, who ſéemed to be Maſter of the reſt, hauing with him a young woman that was his wife: In the ſame alſo was found great ſtore of ſiluer and golde, and ſome victualles. The Captaine not ſtaying vppon this occaſion; forthwith went forwarde, and in the ſelfe ſame daye with his whole Fleete came harde by Mylynde, which is eighteene leagues from Mombaſa; and in three degrees to the Southwarde it hath no good Harbour, for that it is almoſt an open Roade, but there is a certain Piere or reefe whereon the ſea doth beat,

Among the Moores alſo olde men vſe to marrie young women.

which

which is the cause why the ships doe ride far from ỹ shore. This Citie standeth in a broad field along the Sea side, & round about the same are many Palme trees, with many other sorts of trees, which all the yeare grow greene: Also many Gardens and Orchards, replenished with all kind of herbes and fruits, and very faire fountaines of good waters in the same: But principally their Orenges excel, which are not onely very great, but also very sweet and pleasant in taste: They have also great store and plentie of victuals, as Mylyo and Ryse, Cattell both greate and small, also great store of Hennes, which bee very fat and good cheape. The Citie is great, having in the same faire streets, & many faire houses of lime and stone, builded with many lofts, with their windowes and tarrisis made of Lime & earth: The naturall people of that Countrie are blacke, and of good proportion of bodie, with curled haire, the straungers which resort thether & make their abode there, are Moores of Arabia, which doe gouerne themselues very well & commendably, especially the Gentlemen, who from the girdle vpward goe naked, and from the same downeward doe couer themselues with silke, and with very fine cotten cloth, and others with short Cloakes made of Cotten after the olde fashion, the which they doe weare to couer their armepits: and vpon their heads, they weare a certeine manner of Cloth wrought with silke and golde. They weare also rich Daggers with great tassels of silke, of many colours, and swords very well garnished. They be all left handed, and carrie with them alwaies bowes and arrowes, for they vse the pastime of shooting: be great good Archers. Moreouer, they account themselues to be good horsemen, although there bee a common saieng or speach vsed by the inhabitants in the coasts thereabouts: The men on horseback of Mombassa: and the women of Mylynde: for as in Mombassa be very good horsemen, so in Mylynde are very faire women, which goe richly apparelled: In this Citie also dwell many Gentiles of the kingdome of Cambaya, which is in the Indias: and these are greate marchants vsing tract

The beautiful scituation of Mylynde, with the pleasantnes of the soile, and fruits.

or traficke for golde, whereof there is some in that Countrie, as in like manner ther is Amber greace, Iuory, Pitch, and Waxe, all which they giue in exchaunge to such as come from Cambaya for Copper, Quicksiluer, and Cloth of Cotten, and that the one and the other hath gaines therof. The king of this Citie is a Moore, and is serued with farre greater estate then the other kings which remaine behinde. The Generall being come ouer against this Citie did reioyce in his heart very much, and so likewise did all the rest of the Fleete, for that they now saw, a Citie lyke vnto those of Portingale, and therefore they rendered most heartie and humble thankes to God, for their good and safe arriuall there: And being desirous to haue some Pilottes to carrie them to Calicut, the Generall commaunded to come to an Ankor, minding to assay if he coulde by anye meanes obteine such there as might serue for that purpose: For vntill this time, he could not know of the Moores he had taken, whether amongest them were any Pilots, who albeit they were offered torments, still answered and said, there were none of them skilfull in that respect.

Mylynde like a city of Portingale.

¶ How the Captaine Generall sent a Moore in message to Mylynde, and what aunswere the King made him. Cap. 11.

THE next day after being Easter euen, the old Moore which was taken Captiue, with the rest in the Pinnace, tolde the Generall that in Mylynde were foure ships of the Christian India, promising also that if he would license him, and the other Moores to goe to land, he would giue him for his resgat, Christian Pilots, and moreouer wold furnish him with all things he had nede off. The Generall being well pleased with the speaches, and offer of this olde Moore, commaunded to wey theyr Ankors, and so remoued and came to an Ankor within

Digitized by Google

in halfe a leagne of the Citie. But from thence there came no bodie to our Fleete, for they feared and were in doubt that our men would take them captiue, and besides they knew by the Pinnace which the Generall toke, that wee were Christians, beleeuing also that our Shippes were Shippes of warre: All which the Generall supposing they coniectured: hee therefore vppon the Sundaye in the morning commaunded the olde Moore to a certeine Ilande lying ouer against the Citie, and there to leaue him, from whence he deemed they would fetch him, as indeede they did, for when our Boate was gone from thence, there came from the shoare a boat for the Moore, & so caried him alwaye presently to the King, to whome the Moore declared on the behalfe of the Generall what hee requested to haue, and further that hee desired to be at peace with him, in respect of his noble personage, whereof hee had heard greate good reporte, hoping also that it was God his great good will & pleasure that the Indias should bee discouered, which the rather by his aide & furtherance might be accomplished. The king hearing and receiuing in fauourable part the message, and messenger, was also verie gladde thereof, and forthwith returned the Moore in a Boate, sending with him one of his owne seruauntes, and a Priest by whome hee sent the Captaine Generall worde, that he was verye willing to conclude a peace betweene them, and that hee would giue him such Pilottes, as he would desire, with whatsoeuer besides he had neede of, and by these messengers were presented to the Generall, from the King three Sheepe, many Orenges, and Sugar Canes, which he receiued in thankfull wise, & by the selfe same messenger, returned answere to the king their Maister, that he graunted vnto, and accepted of the peace moued and offered betweene them, and was and would be readie to confirme the same. Moreouer hee saide vnto them, that the next daye, hee would enter into their Harbour, and that the King shoulde vnderstande that hee came from, and is subiecte to a greate King, vppon the Cape of the Occident, who was

A present sent to ye Captaine Generall from the king of Mylynde

was deſirous to know where the Citie of Calicut ſtoode, & had ſent him to finde out and diſcouer the ſame, commaunding him alſo, to make peace with all kings and Princes, vpon whoſe territories in his waie, he ſhould hap to come and arriue, which would be willing to haue the ſame with him: and further tolde them that it was now two yeares ſince he came from his Countrie, and that the king his Maiſter was ſuch a worthy and puiſſaunt Prince, as the king their Maiſter would be gladdeto knowe him for his friend: Thus hauing talked and diſcourſed with them to effect aforeſaid, hee then diſmiſſing them, ſending by the ſame for a Preſent a Hat, (which in that time was vſed) and two Braſmes of Coral, three baſons of Braſſe, certeine little Bells, and two Scarffes to the king. The next daie after, being the ſecond after Eaſter daie, the Captaine Generall came neere to the Citie, whereof the king hauing knowledge, did immediatly ſend to viſite him, in more honourable ſorte: for hearing how farre of he was come, and what he ſought, he adiudged the king of Portingale to bee a Prince of a great ſtomack, and the General to be a worthy ſubiect in obeyeng to hazard himſelfe, in ſo daungerous any long a iourney. Alſo hee conceiued greate pleaſure in his heart that he ſhoulde ſee ſuch people, as had ſo long time trauailed vpon the ſea, and ſo deſirous to ſee our men, he ſent word to the Generall, that the next day following, he would in his own perſon viſite him, and that their meeting ſhould be vpon the water, and therewith ſent him fiue ſhæpe, and ſtore of Cloues, Ginger, Pepper, and Nutmegs. This meſſage thus declared, the Captaine Generall yeelded to the kings determination, and therevpon did enter nearer, and came to an Ankor, harde to the foure ſhippes of the Indias, (whereof the olde Pylot tolde him before.) The Owners then hauing knowledge that our ſhippes came from a Chriſtian Countrie, and that we were Chriſtians, did immediatly come to viſite our Generall, who at that inſtant was in the ſhip of Paulo de la Gama: Theſe men are browne of coulour, but they are of good ſtature & well

Digitized by Google

proportionde: They goe apparelled in long white gownes made of cotten, they have great beards, & the hayre of their heades is long lyke vnto woulowes, and pleited vnder theyr toches, which they weare on theyr heades. The Generall at theyr repaire to him, receiued them verye well, asking them first whether they were Chriſtians, by an Interpretour he had that could speake the Algarauia tongue, whereof they had some vnderstanding, saieng that it was not their proper language, howbeit they yet had some knowledge thereof, by occasion of the trade and talke they vsually have with ỹ Moores, of whome they aduised him to beware, and not have ouer farre trust and confidence in those of Mylynde, least that the sequell of their inwarde meaning, were farre contrarie to their outwarde shewe. The Generall determining of himselfe to make tryall, whether they were Chriſtians or not, or had anye knowledge of God, commaunded to bring forth a Table, wherein was painted the picture of our Ladie at what time she wept, in which also were the pictures of some of the Apostles, and shewed the same to the Indians, not telling them what it was: which when they saw, they fell presently downe vpon the ground, worshipping that Representation, and prayed a while, whereof our Generall was verye ioyfull, and then demaunded whether they were of the Citie of Calycut, whereunto they answered, No: howbeit they sayd they were of another Citie, further off called Grangalor, but of Calicut they could not say or informe any thing. And from this time, so long as our Fleete remayned there, they dayly came to the shippe of Paulo de la gama, to make their prayers before that Table, and did offer to the Images in the same, Pepper, and other things. These Indians did eate no Beefe, as we were informed of them.

The description of their persons and attire that inhabite this cõtrey and Citie.

Digitized by Google

¶How the King of Mylynde viſited the Captaine generall, and made peace with him, giuing him a Pilot to carry him to Calycut. Cap. 12.

THe laſt day of the eight after Eaſter, dinner being done, the King of Mylynde came in a great boate hard to our Fleete, apparelled in a Caſſocke of Crimſon Damaſke, lined with greene ſatten, hauing vpon his head a rich towell. He was ſitting in a chaire, ſuch as was vſed in olde time, very well made, and wrought with wire, being in ſight very faire, and in the ſame was a cuſhion of ſilke, and another like vnto that hard by him, which was couered with a hat of Crimſon ſatten. There ſtood hard by him as his Page, an olde man, who carried a very rich ſworde, the ſcabard whereof was ſiluer: he brought with him manye Shaghuts, and two Flutes of Iuorie, which were eight ſpans of length each of them, they were very well wrought, and vpon the ſame they played by a little hole that is in the midſt thereof, agreeing and according well with the ſhaghuts. There came with the King, about the number of twentie Moren Gentlemen all richly apparelled. The King now being come neere to the ſhips, the Captaine generall came forth to meete him in his boat well trimmed and ſet out with all his flagges, and be himſelfe comely araied, withall his beſt apparell, carrieng with him twelue of the moſt principall men of his ſhippes, his brother onely except, whom he left with charge of ẏ ſame.

The meeting of the king of Mylind and the Captaine generall.

The boates of each part being come neere together, and the one making countenance of friendly ſalutation & entertainment to the other, the King then ſaid to the Generall, that he would ſpeake with him in his owne boat, of purpoſe to ſée & view him the better, whervpon forthwith he receiued him into his boat, the King then giuing to the Generall as great honour & curteſie as though he had alſo ben a King: he very earneſtly noted & beheld him & his men, as a ſtrange ſight and matter to him and his people: he required the Generall to tell him the name of his King, and being tolde, he com-

Digitized by Google

commaunded the same to be then presently written: he also inquired matter perticularly of him, & of his power, wherunto the Generall aunswered, and in euerye point satisfied his demaund, declaring also for what cause ỳ king his master had sent him to discouer Cubcat, which was to haue from thence spices, wherof in his dominion & country was none. And after he had thus talked with the king & informed him somewhat of the same & of the straights of ỳ red Sea, the king then promised to him a Pilot to carry him to Calicut: & also very earnestly desired him to goe with him into his Citie, there to take his pleasure, & solace himself in his Pallace, saieng it were needfull & necessary, after so many troubles, in so long a voyage sustained, to vse some recreation, and take some rest: further then promising, that if he would so do, that afterward he in like maner would go with him to see his ships, & make merry in the same, wherunto the Generall aunswered, that he had no license of the king his Master to go a shore, & therefore if he should varie from his Masters mind & commaundement therein, he should then giue occasion of complaint vnto him: to which excuse the king replied, saieng, that if he should go to see his ships, what accompt should he then make to those of his Citie, or what might they deeme & iudge of him therein: yet notwithstanding he said, ỳ it was a griefe to him ỳ he refused to go with him to his Citie, which was & should be at ỳ commandement of him & of ỳ king his master, to whom he wold send his Embassador or els write, if he would come ỳ way at his returne from Cubcat. The General yelding thanks to the king, promised him to returne ỳ way, & whilest they were thus talking there, did send for those Moores, which he had taken captiues, and gaue them to the king, saieng that if he could do him any further pleasure, he would gladly doe the same: with which gift the king was so content, that he said, he did more esteeme of the same, then if he had giuen him such another Citie as that of Mylyndo was.

Now hauing ended their talke and confirmed the friendship betweene them, the king then rowing amongst our ships,

Digitized by Google

and behelde the ſame, with great pleaſure and admiration. out of which great ſtore of ſhot of Ordinaunce paſſed, wherewith they were greatlye delyghted, all which time our Generall went with him, to whom he declared, that he neuer ſaw any men of whom he toke ſo great pleaſure, as he did of thoſe of Portingall, whereof he woulde gladlye haue ſome with him, to helpe him in his warres, which he hath ſometime with his enimies: for it well appeared they were men apt to offend their enimie, and to abide and ſuffer any trauell or paine, that ſhould happen vnto them. To which his ſpeaches the Generall anſwered, that if he had experience of their doings, he woulde then a great deale better lyke of them, and further that they would helpe him, if the King his maſter would defende his ſhips of warre to Calicut, as he doubted not but he would, if it were Gods good pleaſure to permit the ſame to be diſcouered. After the King had in this ſort ſolaced himſelfe, he then deſired the Generall, that ſince he would not go with him to his Citie, he ſhuld then let him haue two of his men to go and ſee his Pallace, and for pledge of the ſame, he would giue him his ſonne, and one of his chiefe Chaplaines, the which they call Cacis, whereunto the Generall yelded and appointed two of our men to go with the King, who at his departure, requeſted the Generall that the next day he would goe along in his boate hard by the ſhore, where he ſhuld ſee his horſemen running, & ſo they departed for that time, the next day being Thurſday, the Captaine generall & Nicholas Coello, went in their boates armed along the ſhore, the one ſomewhat diſtant from the other, betweene whom vpon the ſhore were many men on horſebacke skirmiſhing, & as our boats approached neere the ſhore, there came certaine Gentlemen before certaine Layes of Flowers from the Kings houſe, which was in ſight, where they tooke the King vpon a chaire, and caried him verye neere to the Boats of the Generall, to whom he ſpake verye louingly wordes, and ſome more requeſted him to enter vpon land and go to his Citie, for that his father being a lame man, ſtood deſirous to ſee him, and

that

Digitized by Google

that whilest he should remaine on shoare, both he and his children would enter and abide in his ships. But our Generall, fearing least vnder such sugred speach some bitter baite might lie couered, did therfore still excuse himself for going on land, alleadging hée must obey his Prince, who gaue him no license or commission so to do at anie time. And so taking his leaue of the king, hée went a while hard by the ships of the Indias, shooting off much Ordinaunce, who when they sawe vs passe by lifted vp their hands, saieng: Christe, Christe, and that night with the kings license our men made them a great feast, with much passime also of Squibs, Gunne shot, and great and lowde cryes. The Fléet thus lyeng in ỹ harbour, there came vpon ỹ sundaie being the. 21. day of Aprill, from the king, a man that was in great credit with him, to visite the Captaine Generall, who at that instant was very sad and heauie: for that it was then two daies since any man came to the Fléet from the Citie, by reason whereof he feared least that the king were offended with him, as taking occasion of offence, for that he refused to go on shoare, supposing also that he wold thereupon, breake the peace and league made betwéene them, for which he was sorrowfull, especially since as yet he had no Pilots. And when he sawe, that he which was so great with the king, did bring him no Pilots, he then began to haue some iealousie, and suspition of the king, who being informed therof, and knowing the Generall remained there for that cause, did therefore forthwith send him a Pilot, a Gentile (called in their language Gosarate) whose name was Canaca, making excuse that hée had not sent him sooner, and so the king and the Generall remained friends, and continued the peace before concluded vpon betwéene them.

The Generall vvould not consent to go on lãd at Mylynde

¶ How the Captaine Generall departed from Mylynde, came to Calicut, and of what greatnesse and nobleneſſe that citie is. Cap. 13.

Digitized by Google

THE Captaine Generall being thus prouided of all things neceſſarie for his voyage, departed from Mylynde towards Calicut vpon the Tewſday, being the 22. day of Aprill, and from thence he began to cut ouer a goulfe, which is of ſeauen hundreth and fiftie leagues, for the land there doth make a certeine great valley, which doth runne along the coaſt from the North to the South, and our voiage in demaunding of Calicut, lay to the Eaſtward, in following whereof the next Sunday our men ſawe the North, which a long time before they had not ſeene, and alſo they ſawe the South, of which good fortune they thanked God, in that it repreſented as then to them winter of the Indias, & where alwaies in that goulfe are great ſtormes, they now found none, but rather faire weather: The Fridaye being the .xvii. daye of May, and xiii. daies next after their departing from Mylynde (in which time they had ſeene no land) they then diſcouered & came to ſight of land. And the Fleete being viii. leagues of ſeabord from the ſhoare: the land ſeemed high, their Pilot whoſe name was Canaca, did as then let fall the Plommet, & found fortie fiue fathom, whereupon to auoide and apart himſelfe from that coaſt, he made his way to the Southeaſt, & vpon the Saterday he made to landward, howbeit he ranne not ſo neere the ſame as he might certeinly knowe it, but he perceiued by ſmall ſhowres of raine, which fell as they made towards land, ỹ they were on the coaſt of ỹ Indias, for ỹ at ỹ preſent time of ỹ yere, ỹ winter is euer in thoſe Indias. The ſunday, being ỹ xx. day of May the Pilot ſawe certeine high hils, which were ouer the Citie of Calicut, and came ſo neere to land, that he did reknowledge the ſame, and with great ioy and pleaſure, demaunded of the Generall Albrycias, ſaieng that this was the land, which he and his companie ſo greatly deſired to ſee, and come to. The General repleniſhed with ioy of that good fortune, gaue Canaca his demaund, & forthwith went to praier, ſaieng the Salue, wherein they gaue God greate thanks,

They wer 23 dayes, & ſawe no lād after theyr departure from Mylinde.

Digitized by Google

thanks, for this their happie and safe arriuall vppon that coast, and in sight of the place, which they so earnestly longed for to see, when prayer was done they made great ioy, and feasted on shipboord, and the selfe same daie in the euening, the Generall came to an Anker two leagues from Calicut, and immediatly came certeine people of that land in fowre boates called Almaydyas, to our Fléete, to vnderstand what ships these were, hauing neuer before seene any of that making, come to that coast: These people came all naked, sauing that their members were couered, with little peeces of linnen cloath: they are browne people. At their comming to vs some of them entered into the Generalls shippe, and albeit the Pilot Goserate, tolde him that they were Fishermen, a poore kinde of people (for so they call all such as bee poore men in the Indias) yet hee receyued them all well, and commaunded his men to buye of their Fish, which they brought with them: And hauing some talke with them, he did vnderstand that, that towne was not Calicut, for it was they said further off, & offered to carrie our Fléete thether: Wherevpon the Generall required them so to doe, and therewith departed thence, and were brought by those Fishermen to Calicut, which is a Citie scituated on the Coast of Malabar, which is a Prouince of the second Indias, that hath his beginning in the Mount Dely, and endeth at the end of Comory, which is in lentgh three score leagues and one, and fiftéene in breadth: All the Countrie lyeth lowe, and is apt to be couered with water: Ther be many Ilandes in the same, & it doth enter into the Sea Indico: There is a verie high hill which diuideth the limits betwéene them, and a great kingdome called Narsinga: The Indians do report that this land of Malabar in olde time was maine Sea, and ran as far as ỳ hill where now the Ilands of Maldiua are, which were then firme land, & did couer & discouer ỳ other of Malabar, in which are many and pleasaunt Cities, & those also very rich, by reson of ỳ trade they haue principaly with thẽ of Calicut, which in riches & vice doth excel al in our time, whose

The Fleet arriueth at Calicut & the maner of the people there

Digitized by Google

whoſe foundation was on this ſort: This Prouince of Malabar was in the olde time gouerned altogether by one king, who made his aboade in the Citie of Conlan, and in the laſt kings daies of this land (whoſe name was Saranaperimal, and died fiue hundreth yeares agone) the Moores of Meca diſcouered the Indias, and came to the Prouince of Malabar, the inhabitaunts wherof then were Gentiles, and the king himſelfe was a Gentile: From the time of the comming of theſe Moores, they beganne to account, the yeares as we account, from ẏ birth of our Lord God: And after they came thether, they grew into ſuch familyaritie with this king, and hee entered into ſuch conference & good opinion of their lawes, that he renounced the manner of religion of his owne Countrie, and minded thence forth to imbrace theirs, and the loue and liking he had of this ſect of Mahomet ſo deepely toke rote, and entered into his heart, that he determined to goe and ende his lyfe, in the houſe of Meca: Thus being reſolued, for the loue he bare to that ſect, to abandon and leaue his kingdome for euer, and goe with them, before his departure he imparted to his kinred, and diuided amongeſt them all his Lordſhips, and territories, and hauing diſtributed and giuen the ſame ſo farre forth, that there remained to him no more but fiue leagues of his Countrie, which laye neere to the ſhoare, where he meant to imbarke himſelfe, the which was neuer before inhabited, & therfore he then gaue ẏ ſame to a coſin of his, which then ſerued him as his Page: commaunding ẏ the ſame circuit ſhold be inhabited in perpetuall memorie, of his imbarking there: To the ſame his kinſman hée alſo gaue, his ſword, & a towell after the Moriſco ſort, as things apperteining and incident to the eſtate, & gaue commaundement to all the Gentlemen to whom he had giuen all the reſt of his lands, that they ſhould be obedient & true ſubiects vnto him, and to take him for theyr Emperour, (the kings of Conlan and Canamor onely except) whome alſo he commaunded and charged, & likewiſe al the others, that they nor no other Lordes ſhoulde coine money in the

The firſt & ſtrange inſtitutiõ of the kingdõe of Calicut.

Digitized by Google

Prouince of Malabar, but onely the King of Calycut. So hauing thus bestowed and giuen his lands, possessions and dignities, as he thought good, and set euery necessary thing in order, for establishing his determinate will and pleasure, he then imbarked himselfe there, wher now Calicut is builded and situated, and for that the King did there imbarke himself to go towards ỹ house of Mecca, ỹ Moores then took such deuotion towards that place, that they and all their posteritie euer since that time hetherto would not, nor yet will take any lading but out of that Port. And from that time afterward, they came no more to the Port of Coulan, as vsually they did before, by meane and occasion whereof, the same grew to ruine, and was destroyed, especially when Calicut was once builded, and that many Moores came and inhabited the same. For as they were Merchaunts of great dealings, so came they thether, and made there the greatest and richest Faire or Marte of all the Indias, finding there all the Spices, Drugs, Nutmegs, and all other things that could be wished, as all kindes of precious stones, pearles, & seede of pearle, Muske, Saunders, Aguila, fine Dishes of earth, Laker, gylted Coffers, and all the fine things of the Chyna, Gold, Amber, Ware, Iuorie, fine and course cotten, as well white as dyed in colours, much rawe silke, & silke twisted, and all kinde of linnen cloth of silke and golde, and cloth of golde, and cloth of tissew, chamlets, graine, scarlets, carpets of silke, Copper, Quicksiluer, Vermilion, Allome, coralls, Rose waters, and all kinde of Conserues, so that there is no kinde of Merchandise of all the world, which coulde be demaunded, but it should be found there. Moreouer, it was very quiet, for that it was situated along the Coast, the which lieth almost open, and very daungerous: it is inuironed & set round about with many Orchards, in which are many sorts of fruits of that lande, and many hearbes, and excellent waters. Also they haue many Palme trees, and other sorts of trees. In this lande there is but small store of Rice, which is ther a principall victuall, as amongst vs our Wheate is, but there commeth from other places

Laker is a kinde of gum that procedeth of the Ant.

Digitized by Google

great aboundaunce thereof, as in like manner there doeth of other victualls. The Citie is great, and all the houſes be of ſtraw, (onely the houſes of their Idolls, Chappels, and the Kings houſes except) which are of lyme and ſtone, and couered with tyle, for none but they are permitted by theyr lawes to haue anye other manner of building then with ſtrawe. It was inhabited by Gentiles of ſundry ſects, and by Moores which were great Merchaunts, and ſo rich, that ſome of them had fiftie ſhips. There is no ſuch ſeaſon of Winter, but that there may lye in that Harbour fiue hundred ſhippes. They haue there a ſhore whether they do cary them with ſmall trauaile, for that they be made without nailes, ſowed with ropes of Cayro, and pitched vpon, they haue no quiell, but are flat bottomed.

¶Of what great power the King of Calicut is, and of his vſe and cuſtome: likewiſe of the other Kings of Malabar, and how the Nayres do liue. Chapter. 14.

FOr that this Citie was of ſo great a trade, and alſo the Countrey round about, ſo inhabited, which increaſed ſo largelye the Kings rents, it came to paſſe, that he grew to be ſo rich of money, and ſo mightie in power by multitude of people, that in one daye he was able to leauie and make in a readineſſe thirtie thouſand fighting men, and in three dayes ſpace, one hundred thouſand. They called him Samoryn, which in theyr tongue is Emperour, for ſo he was among the Kings of Malabar, and there were no more but two beſide him: that is to ſay the King of Coulan and the King of Canuor: For albeit the others were called Kings, yet were they not ſo.

This

Digitized by Google

This King of Calycut was a Bramene, as others his Predecessours also were, which amongst the Malabars are Priests, and for that it is a custome and auncient order observed, that all the Kings doe dye in one Pagode, which is the house of praiers to their Idolls, he is elected for that cause, for alwayes in the same house there must be and is, a King to serue those Idolles, and when he that serueth there doeth dye, then must the King that then raygneth and gouerneth, leaue his Empire, and goe serue in that place as the other did, and into his place and Kingdome, they elect and put an other, that shall so succeede him. The election and succession of the kings of Calicut.

And if anye of them that is in possession of the Kingdome, refuse to goe into the Pagode, (the King that then serueth in the same being dead) they will then inforce him thereto which so refuseth, although it be against his will. These Kings of Malabar be browne men, and goe naked from the gyrdell vpwarde, and from thence downewarde, they be couered with cloath of silke and of Cotten: sometime they put vppon them shorte gownes, which they doe call Basus of silke or cloath of golde, and of scarlet with very rich stones: and especiallye the King of Calycut excelleth in those attires and Jewells. They be shauen, leauing vpon the vpper lip as the Turkes vse, the hayre vnshauen. They be serued but with small estate, especiallye at theyr meate, whereof they haue but lyttle: But the King of Calycut is serued, with greater Estate.

These Kings doe not marrie, nor obserue the Lawe of marriage, but yet they maye haue a Lemman of the house of the Nayres, which amongest the Malabars are Gentlemen, and shee hath hir house by hir selfe, neere to the Pallaice. They doe allowe hir so lyberallye for hir charges and maintenaunce, that she maye haue plentifullye of all thinges to hir contentation, vppon that Stypende assigned hyr. the kings Lemman with hir state and allowāce

And when any disliking is had of hir by them, they may

Digitized by Google

alwayes leaue hir and ſuch children as they haue by hir, be not taken or accompted for theyrs, neither doe they inherite the Kingdome, nor anye thing of theyrs.

After they be men, they are had in no more eſtimation, then that is incident vnto them from the mothers blood and parentage. Their brothers doe inherite if they haue any, if not, then their ſiſters children ſhall, who doe not marry, neither yet haue any certaintie of their huſbands. They be very free and at libertie, to chooſe thoſe of whom they lyke, and be ſuch as are beſt eſteemed of. They haue verye great rents allowed them: and when anye of them come to the age of ten yeares, (for at that time they are to be knowen of men) their kinred then doe ſende forth out of this kingdome, for a young man Nayre, and preſenting him with gifts, earneſtly requeſt the ſame to take hir virginitie, who then receiueth hir with great ioy, and after ſhe is thus vſed, doth tye about hir necke a Jewell, which ſhe doth carry and weare alwayes during hir life, as a thing in great eſtimation, & for a token of the libertie giuen hir by that act, to do with hir bodie afterward for euer, what ſhe will: for without this manner of ceremonie, they may not know any mã. Theſe Kings ſometimes haue warres one with another, & they in their owne perſons goe into the fieldes, yea, and if néd ſo require, they alſo fight: when they die, they be caried out from their pallaice into a plain field, wher they be burned with great quantitie of wood of ſanders & a ſweét wood called Aguila. At this burning are alwaies preſent all his brothers, & neereſt kinred, and al the noble men of the countrey. And they make kaye of him from burning after his death three daies, that they all may repaire thether & come together, to ſée and viewe whether he came to his death naturallye, or whether he were killed: for if he dyed by force of anye mans hande, then are they bounde to take reuenge thereof.

After hée is burned, and all the aſhes buryed, they doe all ſhaue themſelues without leauing any hayre, yea, euen of the leaſt childe that is a Gentile.

All

Digitized by Google

All of them in generall doe then ceasse from eating of Betele, during the space of thirteene daies, and he that doth eate the same infringeth their law, and therefore they wil cut his lips, and that by iustice: In all this time, the prince which shall succeed doth not command nor gouerne, which is done of purpose, to see whether in that time anye man will come to saie or obiect any thing against him. These things and daies, thus done and past, the noble men of the Countrie doe cause him to bee sworne, to all those lawes & customs, which were made by his predecessour, and to pay all his debts: Also that hee shall trauaile to recouer whatsoeuer things of his kingdome before were lost. This oath he taketh hauing his sworde in his lefte hande, and in the right hande a Candle burning, which hath a ring of golde vppon it, which he toucheth with two of his fingers, and so taketh his oath. This being done, they throwe or powre vpon him a few graines of Rice, with many such other ceremonies, in doing whereof they say many prayers, and he worshippeth then the Sunne, three times, which so done, the Caymayles, that be Lords by parentage doe immediatly holding the selfe same Candle, sweare to be true subiects vnto him.

The thirteene daies being ended, they all then doe eate Betele againe, and flesh and fish as before, the king onely except, who then taketh thought and sorroweth for the death of his predecessour: whose manner of mourning is thus: He must not by the space of one whole yeare, eate any flesh or fish, or yet Betele, neither must he shaue his beard, nor cut his nailes, nor eate but once in a daie, and must wash himselfe all his bodie ouer, before he doe eate, and praie certeine houres in the daye: After the yeare is past and ended, he then vseth a certeine ceremonie for the soule of the king his predecessour, which is much like to our Dirge, whereat are assembled an hundreth thousand persons, at which time he giueth great almes, when this ceremonie is finished, they then confirme the Prince for inheritour of the kingdome, and so all the people do depart.

Digitized by Google

The king of Calicut and all the other kings of Malabar, haue one especiall man that hath the charge for administration of iustice, and doth command & is obeyed in all other matters of gouernement as amplie as the king himselfe. The men of warre which the king of Calicut & the other kings haue, are Nayres, which be all Gentlemen, and are appointed to no other office or affaires, but to fight when néede requireth. They be all Gentiles, and carrie their armour wherewith they fight themselues, which is bowes, arrowes, speares, daggers made like a hooke, and targets, and march with them very honourably and gallantly, but they goe naked, carrieng onely certeine linnen cloth of cotten painted, with the which they couer themselues from the girdle to the knée, they are bare footed: and weare vppon their heads certeine towels. They all liue by the king, and by the noblemen of the countrie, of whome they haue ordinarie stipends and allowaunce for their maintenaunce: They doe so greatly estéeme and make account of their gentrie, and of their cleanlinesse, that they will not touch any husbandman, neither permit any of them to come into their houses. The husbandmen are bound when they goe in the stréetes to crie with a lowde voyce, and saye, Hoo they goe, for if these Gentlemen doe come, and bid them goe out of the way, and they doe not obey their commaundement therein: then may they kill them: The king cannot make Gentlemen, except they be of the stocke of Gentlemen. They serue very well and faithfully, with them of whome they haue their interteinment, and vnder whose obeysaunce they liue, not sparing by night nor daie, anye opportunitie of time for shewe of their best indeauour in seruice of the same, nor making anye account of meat or of their person or of slépe, whensoeuer their trauell or dilligence, may take effect or purpose of well doing. They haue so small charge and occasion of expence, that with halfe a crowne a péece (which is their ordinarie allowance for one moneth) they may very well and sufficiently, maintéine themselues, and each of them a boye to serue him.

Naires, & vvhat theyr degree, office, & calling is.

The

The Nayres by the law of the country, cannot marry, and for that cause they haue no children certain, but those which they haue are begotten of Lemmans, with which three or fowre of them do lie, by accord & agréement had and determined amongest themselues, hauing one woman onelye to serue that purpose, vnlesse any cause or quarrell growe amongest them, and euerye one of them shall be with her a whole daie, accompting from the one halfe of the daye present wherein he commeth, to the other halfe of the day next following, at which time he departeth from her, and then commeth another, who continueth the lyke time: Thus they passe ouer and spend their life time without care and trouble of wife and children: They mainteine their lemmans verie well according to their degrées and birth. And if any of them will at any time leaue and forsake her, they may at their pleasure doe it, and likewise she maye refuse anye of them at her will. These women are all Gentlewomen, for the Nayres maye not take anye Countrie women, and they also doe not marrie: And for that there bée so many men to one woman, they take not them for theyr children which bée begotten of her, although the same bée lyke vnto them: and therefore theyr brothers children, doe inherit their lands, and haue their goods: This lawe that these Gentlemen shoulde not marrie, the king ordeined and made, for that they hauing no wiues nor children, on whom they should haue care and fixe their loue, might the better indure the warres, and liue at more libertie to serue in the same.

And because they are Gentlemen, and that they should be the more animated and incouraged to liue in that order, and to serue well, they be so priuiledged, that none of them can be imprisoned for any cause, nor be put to death by anye meane of ordinarie iustice: Howbeit when one of them doth kill another, or else doth kill a Cowe, (which amongst them is taken for a greate sinne, for that they worshippe them) or sleepe or eate with a countrie woman, or speake euill of the king.

The Calicutiās kill no kine for they worship them.

The

Digitized by Google

Then will the king, hauing true information of any of these offences, giue out his warrant in writing vnder his owne hand, directed to one Nayre, commaunding him thereby, that he with two or three other, doe forthwith kill the Nayre, that hath so offended and sinned contrarie to the Law: By vertue of which warrant, they hew and cut him with their swords, whersoeuer they doe finde him, and when he is dead, they hang vpon him the kings writing, to the end that all men may know and vnderstand wherefore they killed him: These Nayres cannot take their weapons, nor enter into any combat, before they be armed knights: when they attaine to the age of seauen yeares, they bee forthwith set to learne to play at all weapons, & to the ende they should bee very perfect, their Maisters doe hale and wrest the ioyntes of their armes, and afterward they teache them their fence such as bee apt for the same: The weaponnes that are most vsed amongest them be Swords and Targets. The Maisters which teach them, be graduats in the weapons which they teach, and they bee called in their language Panycaes. They be reuerenced amongest the Nayres, & euery scholler of theirs whatsoeuer, although he be olde, or if hee be a great noble man, shall at all times when he seeth him, doe to him reuerence and worship, and this by lawe is ordeined: and further all of them are bound to take at their hands a lesson, two monthes in euery yeare, during their liues; By reason whereof they be very perfect and skilful in their weapons, and for that cause they greatly esteeme of themselues.

When any of them will be an armed knight, hee then goeth well accompanied with all his kinred and friends, & presenteth himselfe before the king, to whome he first offereth threescore Fanoys of golde, which is a certeine kinde of money amounting to the value of three crownes. Whereupon the king doth immediatly aske him, whether he will keepe and obserue the order and customs of the Nayres, Whereunto he answereth and saith yea. Then hee commaundeth to put about him a sword, and laying his right hand

hand vpon his head, saith certaine wordes as though he would pray ouer him, which he vttereth so softly, as none can heare the same. Afterward he imbraceth him, saieng in his language these wordes following, which in our tongue, doth signifie or meane: Haue a regard to keepe these Bramenes and their Kine. This being done, the Nayre doth fall down and worship the King, and from thence forth he remaineth made Knight. These Nayres when they yelde themselues to liue and serue any King or Noble man, they binde themselues to dye with him, and for him: which bond they doe so well obserue and inuiolably keepe, that if their Master in any warre or otherwise be slaine, they will fight vntill they are killed, which hath done the same acte, and if at that instant they cannot accomplish their wills, for that they were not present at the deede doing, then will they goe afterward and seeke them out, and neuer leaue them till they be killed by some manner of deuise. They be great southsayers, they haue good dayes and bad dayes, they worship the Sun, the Mone, the fire, and the Kine, and the first that they do meet in going forth of their house in the morning: they doe easily beleeue whatsoeuer vanitie. The Diuell is oftentimes in them, but they say it is one of their Gods or Pagodes, for so they call him: but whosoeuer or whatsoeuer it be, it inforceth them to vtter terrible wordes & speaches, which the King doth beleeue. And the Nayre in whome the Diuell is so entred, goeth with a naked sword before the King, altogether quaking & trembling, giuing himself cuts & wounds saieng, I am such a God, and I am come to tell thee such a thing, & in this manner he vseth himselfe, crieng out lyke a mad man: and if the King make any doubt of that he saith & doth not presently giue credite to his speache, then doth he roare & send forth greater cryes & giue himselfe greater cuts, vntill such time the King doe beleeue him. There be other linages of people of ỳ Malabars, which are of diuers sects & customes, whereof to speake were ouer tedious, & too long to declare: all which doe obaye those Kings, (the Moores onely except) which by reason of the great customes they

their god or the diuell is many times in them.

Digitized by Google

paye for their Merchandiſe, are in great eſtimation among them.

¶How the Captaine generall ſent one of his baniſhed men to Calycut, and how a Moore of Tunis came and ſpake with him, by whoſe meanes he ſent a meſſenger to the King of Calycut, and how he returned anſwere to the Generall. cap. 15.

THe Captaine generall being come to an Anker without the Barre or Recife of Calycut, he ſent one of his baniſhed men in the ſelfe ſame Almaydes or boats which they brought thether, for two reſpects: the one to ſee what Countrey it was: the other to make tryall how we ſhould be receiued, becauſe we wer Chriſtians, beleeuing alſo ỹ the people there wer chriſtened: & when this baniſhed man was landed, ther came immediatly a great number of people to ſee him as a ſtranger: they aſked of the Malabars which went with him, what he was? Who anſwered, that they deemed him to be a Moze, and that he came with thoſe which are in the three ſhippes they doe ſee without the Barre at Anker. Whereof they of Calycut greatly merualled, for that his apparrell was far different from that which the Mozes ỹ come from ỹ ſtraights, doe vſe to weare. Thus flocked about him much people, & ſome that had the Algarauia tongue, ſpake vnto him, but he hauing no vnderſtanding thereof could not nor did make anny anſwere or ſpeaches vnto them, at which alſo they in like manner greatly merualled, for that being a Moze (as they deemed) he did not vnderſtand the Algarauia language: Neuertheleſſe going with him in this manner, and verelye yet beleeuing he was a Moze, they caried him to the houſe of two Mozes, which were naturally borne in Tunys in Barbarie, and were then come to dwell in Calicut. To whom being brought, one of them whoſe name was Bontaybo could ſpeake the Spaniſh tongue, & did well knowe the

Bontaybo a More of Barbarie, dwelling in Calicut

Digitized by Google

the Portingals as he said afterward, hauing seene them in Tunys in the time of ỳ King Don Ioan in the ship called Lareyna which the same King sent thether manye times to seeke for such things as he and his subiects hadde nede of. And as soone as the banished man was entered into their house, the Poore spake vnto him and saye: I giue thee to the Diuell, who brought thee hether, which woords was vttered in ỳ Spanish tongue. And after he asked him what way he had gone and trauailed, that he was come to this place: whereunto the banished man aunswered & told him, shewing also, how many ships the Generall had ther, wherat Bontaybo meruailed, and wondred how they could come by Sea thether. Then he asked him what they sought so farre off? And he aunswered that they came to seeke Christians and spices. Moreouer Bontaibo asked why ỳ Kings of Fraunce and Spaine, & the Duke of Venice did not also sende thether? Whereto the banished man made aunswere, that ỳ King of Portingale would not giue his consent they should so doe: Bontaybo replieng thereto, saide, that he did well & wisely therein. Thus hauing talked a while, he gaue him very good entertainment, and commaunded to giue him certaine Cakes, made of the flower of Wheate, which the Malabars do call Apes, and with the same honnie. After he had well eaten, Bontaybo aduised him to go to the ships, & said he would goe with him, (as indeede he did) to see ỳ Captaine generall. And being come to the Admirall which was then entered, Bontaybo then began to say to the General in Spanish: God lucke, good lucke, many Rubies, many Emeraulds: thou art bound to giue great thankes to God, for that he hath brought thee where there is all kinde and sorts of spices, stones, and all the riches of the worlde.

When they heard him so saye, they all meruayled greatlye thereat, for they before would not haue beleeued, that there hadde beene anye man so farre off from Portingale, that could vnderstande theyr language.

Wherefore with weeping teares which they then plentifully

ly ſhed for ioye and pleaſure they had conceiued, as well for the ſame, as alſo for their ſafe and happie arriuall there, they then gaue to God moſt humble and heartie thankes through whoſe onely fauour, good will, and pleaſure, that good lucke and great good benefite, had happened to them. And then the Generall imbraced Bontaybo, and cauſed him to ſit downe by him, aſking him if he were a Chriſtian, and how he came to Calicut? For aunſwere whereto ỹ Moze told him of whence he was, and what he was, and how he came to Calicut by the way of Cayro, alſo he ſhewed him by what meanes he came to knowledge of Portingals, and that alwaies he had bene a friend to them, for that in all reſpects & at all times, their doings & manners appeared to him to be good and woꝛthy of friendſhip. Finally he ſayde, that as he had in time paſt bene a friend to them, ſo would he now at this preſent continue his good will, and was ready and would be to doe all that in him was to pleaſure & further them, and the effect of their purpoſe in comming thether. The Captaine generall gaue him great thankes, and promiſed to recompence him very liberally in reſpect of that his good will, and for any pleaſure or friendſhip he ſhoulde thenceforth ſhew to him and his company, he ſhuld be wel aſſured to be thankfully conſidered of. Declaring alſo that he was the moſt ioyfull man of all the world to finde him there, and to haue him for a friend and an ayde, verely beleeuing that God had ſent him thether, to giue an ende to the enterpriſe of the voyage, which he ſo deſired in diſcouering of thoſe Indias, and had entered into, and paſſed through ſo many daungers by long tract of time to attaine vnto the ſame, and now notwithſtanding his arriual ther, he thought to haue but ſmall fruite of his trauaile, without his helpe & friendly furtheraunce.

Then he requeſted him to declare, what manner of man the King of Calycut was, and whether he thought he would receiue him with good will as an Embaſſadour from the King of Portingale.

Bontaybo aunſwered, that the King of Calycut, was

Digitized by Google

was a very good man and of an honourable disposition, and that he no doubt would receiue him gladly, for Embassadour, from a straunge king, especially if his comming were to settle and intreate for establishment of tract or trade of merchaundise in Calicut, and had brought with him anye kinde of Merchaundise for that purpose: For (said Bontaibo) as there doth grow great aduauntage and profit by custome thereof to the king, so is the same indede the verye principall rents or reuenewes he hath for his maintenaunce: Moreouer he informed the Generall that the king at that instant was in a certaine village fiue leagues from Calicut, scituated along the coast, named Panane, whether he aduised him to send vnto him, & to declare of his arriuall and comming thether. The Generall very well liking of the speaches and aduise of Bontaybo, did therefore giue vnto him certeine gifts, and sent with him two of his men in message to the king of Calicut, requesting Bontaybo to direct them on their waye to Panane, which he accordingly did. These messengers being nowe come before the king, one of them whose name was Fernan Martyn, by an interpretour which he had, declared vnto him, that he came from his Captaine who is arriued in the port of Calicut with certeine shippes, and is come thether from the king of Portingale, of purpose to bring him letters, which the same Captaine is readie to come and present vnto him, if it so stode with his good liking and pleasure, whereof to vnderstand he then had sent him, and his fellowe there present. The king hearing this message, commaunded before he would make aunswere thereto, to giue to each of them a certeine peece of lynnen cloth made of Cotten, and two of silke whith were very good, and euen such wherewith he was accustomed to girdle himselfe: And after these peeces were so giuen them, he then demanded of Fernan Martyn, what king that was which hadde sent him those letters, and how farre from thence his kingdome was, whereunto Fernan aunswered and fully informed him touching that demaund, declaring also that he was

The king of Calicuts greatest reuenue riseth by custõe of Merchandise.

Certeine messegers sent by ỹ Captaine generall to ỹ king of Calicut

Digitized by Google

a Chriſtian prince, & that all thoſe whom he had ſent were chriſtians, hauing paſt many troubles and daungers vpon the ſea, before their arriuall there at Calicut. The king hearing all the diſcourſe of their voiage (wherof Fernan Martynes ſomwhat at large informed him) did greatly maruell at the ſame, & ſhewed himſelfe to be right glad, ỹ a Prince of ſo great a power as the king of Portingale was, & being alſo a chriſtian, would ſend an Ambaſſadour to him: And therefore he ſent word to the Generall that he and his cõpanie were hartelye welcome into his Countrie, requiring him to bring his ſhips to an ankor nére, to a village named Padarane (which is ſomwhat beneath the place where they firſt came to an ankor) being a far better harbour then that of Calicut, which is an open roade & very dangerous for the ſhips: And appointed that from thence, the General ſhuld go by land to Calicut, wher he wold be to ſpeak with him: And therũ he ſent a Pilot, who conuaied the ſhips to the port of the ſame village, howbeit when he had conducted them to the bar thereof, the Generall woulde not enter ſo far within the ſame, as ỹ Pilot would gladly haue had him to haue done, fearing indéd that ſome thing might afterward happen to his preiudice, if he ſhuld giue ouer farre credit to thoſe people, & came within the compaſſe of anye their forces, wherin he dealt very aduiſedly and wiſely, preuented ſuch iniury as was offered him.

How the king of Calicut ſent for the Captaine Generall and after what ſort he was carried to Calicut. Cap. 16.

He Captaine being come nére to this harbour, his diſpatch was ſent him from ỹ Cattuall of Calicut, in ỹ which there was ſignified ỹ he was come to Pandarane, by the kings commaundement, with other noble men, for to beare him company vnto Calicut, and therefore he might at all times when ỹ it ſhould

pleaſe

Digitized by Google

seake him, disimbarke himselfe: But for ỳ the day was past ỳ Captaine Generall excused himselfe as at ỳ present, & also ỳ he would first take counsell of his Captaines, & other the principall of his Fleet, touching his landing, who being all joyned together, said vnto them, ỳ he minded to go to see ỳ king of Calicut, & to settle there a trade, and a perpetuall friendship. Against the which his going, his brother repugned, alleadging ỳ it was not conuenient ỳ he shuld so doe. For albeit ỳ they were christians, yet ỳ ther were amongst them many Moores, which were to be feared least thy wold procure his destruction, since that they were his mortall enimies. For when that they doe remember how those of Monsambicke and Mombassa, for onely passing by theyr ports, would haue killed them all: What should they looke for, of those of Calicut, knowing that they will mixture themselues with you & yours: quoth he, you seeking to haue the trade where they haue the same, & so to diminish this their profit and gaine: He tolde him therefore that it is the sooner to be beleeued, that they wold procure with all their force possible to destroy him, yea, although they knew that the beginning and end of the same did depend vppon his death, and that therefore there woulde not lacke wayes to put the same deuice in execution, who being once dead, for all the griefe the king shoulde take therewith, yet hee could not raise him againe to lyfe. And that so much the more they beeing as it were naturall inhabitauntes there, and he a meere straunger.

Moores mortall enimies to christians

Moreouer who doth know what the king doth passe for his death, and what shall become of them all after the same is procured. And if so be that they shuld be cast away altogether, then were all theyr trauaile lost. To excuse all this, and that they might remaine vppon this good assurannce, it were very good sayd hee, that hee did not goe a shoare, but that hee did sende one of them, or some other, who might doe that which he shoulde doe, for those that are Captaines in especiallye Generalls shoulde not aduenture themselues in such daungers, but where there were such

Princes & Generalls ought to be careful of their persons in respect of their place and charge.

Digitized by Google

ſuch great neceſſitie, that they coulde not otherwiſe excuſe themſelues. Of this minde were all the reſt of the companie, vnto whome the Captaine Generall aunſwered, that although he knew or did vnderſtand ẏ by his comming it were preſent death vnto him, yet he woulde not let but goe and viſit the king of Calicut, and the rather to ſee whether he would ſettle a friendſhip and trade there, and to haue out of his Citie, Spices and other commodities, for that the ſame (at our arriuall in Portingale) might repreſent as a witneſſe the diſcouerie of Calicut. For if ſo be that at the end of ſo long a time God did returne vs thether without: then ſaid he, it would be hard to be beleeued that wee had diſcouered Calicut: And our credit and honour woulde ſtand in ſuſpence or ballance, vntill ſuch time there ſhould come perſons of credit from thence, that ſhoulde declare that to bee true which we had affirmed. Therefore doe you not thinke but ẏ I had rather die then ſuffer ſo long time, as we haue ſpent, and are lyke to ſpend, and others ſhall come to diſcouer ẏ truth of our ſeruice: ſo that in the meane while, thoſe that are enuious, ſhould iudge our trauaile as it ſhuld pleaſe them, certeinly I had rather die then to tarrie vpon the ſame: Much more friends I doe not aduenture my ſelfe to ſo great a daunger of death as you do ſurmiſe, neither yet that they ſhould remaine in ſo great danger, as you doe preſuppoſe, for I goe to a Countrie where there are Chriſtians and to talke with a king, which is deſirous that vnto his Citie ſhould come many Merchants, for the profit that doth ariſe thereby vnto him: for the more Merchants that do reſort vnto it, the more wil be his profit. I doe not goe thether to ſtay there many daies that the Moores ſhall haue any ſuch time to vſe anye treaſon againſt me. And for ſo much as I doe minde to talke with the king it ſhall haue an end, and that within three dayes, and in this time you may be in a readineſſe: And as touching the honour and credit that I ſhall get by making or eſtabliſhing this trade, if it pleaſe God that he doe accept the ſame I will not giue it for any treaſure. And the king

can

Digitized by Google

my selfe the more with no other better then with me, for that he will esteeme me, and beare some reuerence towards me, being once knowen vnto him that I am the Captaine generall of this Fleete, and the King of Portugales Embassadour, rather then with any other person whatsoeuer. Furthermore whosoeuer he be that shall goe in my steede, the King will thinke himselfe to be wronged, or that I do not esteeme him, as one that is worthy that I should goe to speake with him, or els that I doe not trust him on his word. Besides all this, I cannot giue so large instructions to him that I should send thether, that he might doe in all things which is needfull as much as I my selfe: and if so be that for my sinnes he should kill me, or take me as a prisoner, it were a great deale better for me that ther should chaunce to me all this for doing of my ductie, then to remaine alyue, and not to doe the same. And you my friendes remaining in the Sea and in good ships, as soone as you shal heare that any of these things shall chaunce vnto me, get you home, and carrie newes of this our discouerie, and as touching this, let there be no farther talke; for that I by the grace of God will goe to Calicut to see the King. When that his determination was perceiued, they all assented that they were contented with his going: and thereupon they appointed him twelue of his men to goe with him, that is to say, Diego Dias his Secretarie and Fernan Martines the interpretour, Iohn de Sala, which was afterward Treasurer of the house of the Indias, &c. So that with him in all they were thirteene. They appointed also that in his absence ther should remaine for Captaine generall his brother. Also hee gaue commaundement that he should not suffer any man to come aboord his ship, and all those that were desirous to goe aboord to commaund them to remaine in their boate or Almadias. Moreouer he left order with Nicholas Coello, that he should come euery day with his boate as neere vnto ỹ shore as he could. These things being setled, the next day after being Mundaye, the viiij. of May, the Captaine generall did imbarke himself with those twelue before rehearsed,

The Generall determined to goe to Calicut

Digitized by Google

they all being apparailed in the beſt attire that they had, & their boates furniſhed with much ſoꝛdinuance, flagges, and trumpets, which went alwaies ſounding, vntill ſuch time ꝑ ꝑ Captaine generall came to land, whereas ꝑ Catual was tarrieng foꝛ him, being accompanied with 200. Nayres, which attended ther continually: beſides many others ꝑ were not of that company, & beſides many alſo, ꝑ were of ꝑ iſlande. The Captaine generall being diſimbarked, was ioyfully receiued of ꝑ Catuall, & of ꝑ others ꝑ did accompany him, as though they were very glad of his comming, & after ꝑ he was thus receiued, he was taken into an Andoꝛ, which ꝑ King of Calecut had lent to bring him vpon, foꝛ ꝑ in this countrey they are not accuſtomed to goe a horſeback, but in theſe Andoꝛs, which are like vnto a hoꝛſlitter, ſauing ꝑ they are wont any couer ouer them, & almoſt plaine, ꝑ ſides therof are alſo very low. Euery of theſe Andoꝛs, when they will occupie ꝑ ſame, are caried wᵗ 4. men vpon their ſholders, which alſo doth run poſt wᵗ thē, at ſuch time as ꝑ king & noble men do make any great iourny, foꝛ if ſo be ꝑ they wil go a great ground in a ſmall time: foꝛ they may trauell in ꝑ ſame either ſitting oꝛ lieng, as they will themſelues. Alſo ther go with theſe certain footmen, which carie with them hats, wherewith to couer thoſe ꝑ go in theſe Andoꝛs, which they do call Bueys, ſo that by this meanes, they are kept from ꝑ ſunne & the raine, ther are alſo other Andoꝛs, ꝑ which haue ouer thē a cane bowed like vnto a hoope, which foꝛ ꝑ they are made very light, may eaſily carie thoſe 2. men. The Captaine generall being mouted in this Andoꝛ, departed wᵗ the Catuall, who was caried in another Andoꝛ, to a towne called Capocate, but all ꝑ reſt of the cōpany went afoote, the people of the country was cōmaunded by the Catuall to carie all ſuch apparel as our mē had brought vp wᵗ thē, which was ther redelinered vnto thē, & being in Capocate, they ſtaid to refreſh themſelues: where the Captaine generall being in one houſe & the Catuall in another they did eate, & to al our men was giuen to eat ſodden fiſh, wᵗ rice & butter, beſides fruits of ꝑ countrey, which differ from ours very much, yet they are very good. The ſame ſoꝛt

The Captaine Generall goeth a land.

the fruits of Calicut

Digitized by Google

sort of these is called Laces, and the other Mangas; howbeit they haue figs also. The water y they did drinke, was very excellent, as good as any in Portingal. Thus after they had eaten, they went againe to imbarke themselues, for that they should go by a riuer, which from thence runneth into the sea: the Captaine generall did imbarke himselfe with his company into 2 Almadias, lieing the one close to the other, which in y countrey they did call Enfangada. The Catuall wt his traine were imbarked in many others, and the people that came to the riuers side to see vs, was vnto our iudgement without number, for so much as that countrey is full inhabited. And after that they had gone in this riuer about a league, and that along the shores side, they saw lieing a ground many great ships, the Captaine generall with the Catuall being disimbarked, did returne to their Almadias, and following their waye, there resorted alwayes about them: thousandes of people to see them: wherein they take such delicitie that the very women also with their children hanging at their backes, did not feele the waye they went in, following to feed their eyes. From this place which I haue made mention of, the Catuall did carrie him vnto a certaine Pagode of their Idolls, into which when they were entred, he told him that the same was a Church of great deuotion, which the Captaine generall beleeued to be true, & to be some church of the Christians, & therfore he gaue the more credit thervnto, the rather for that he saw y ouer the principall dore therof, there hanged seuen little bells, & aboue the same there was a pillour made of wier, the which was as high as the maste of a ship, vpon the top therof there stood a weathercock, made likewise of wier. This church was as great as a good Monestary, and was made all of free stone, and couered or vaulted ouer with bricke, which gaue an outwarde shewe, as though within side it should be of verye fine workemanship. One Captaine was very glad to see the same, for that he thought himselfe to be among Christians, and entering within this Church with the Catuall, they were receiued by certaine men, naked from the girdle vpwarde,

Digitized by Google

and from thence bowne to the knee, couered with certaine linnen cloth made of cotten, with ỹ which their arme holes were couered also, without any thing vpon their heads, and vpon their left sholders they had certaine number of thriddes, which came vnder their right sholders, much like as the Priests were wont to weare their stoles heare amongst vs, when they went to Maſſe. These men are called Cafres and are Gentiles, which serue in Malabar in their Pagodes, who with a spunke toke water out of a certaine fountaine & threw the same vpon the Captaine generall & vpon the Canuall and on the rest of the company. After all this they gaue them Saunders in pouder to cast the same vpon their heades as they did were their Ashes, & as also they shuld do ỹ like vpon ỹ brawns of their armes, but they could not do so, by reason of their apparrel which they had on, but yet they did not let to worke on their heades. So going about this Church, they saw many Images painted vpon ỹ wal, whereof some ther wer ỹ had great teth, which appeared to be so monstrous ỹ they were of an inch of length without their mouth. Others ther wer ỹ had foure armes, & therwith wer so ill fauoured, that they seemed to be very diuells, ỹ which sight made our men stand in doubt, whether the same wer a Church of Christians or no. Being come afore the Chappel which stood in ỹ midst of their Church, they perceiued ỹ the same had a certain little roke, made much after ỹ manner of a tower, ỹ which was also builded of free stone, & in a parte of this roke ther was a doze made of wire, by ỹ which a mã might enter into it: the going vp to the same tower, was by a staire of stone within this tower, which indeed was somewhat darke, was inclosed in ỹ walk a certain Image ỹ which our men beheld a far off, for ỹ they would not suffer the to go nere ỹ same, saieng ỹ ther was none ỹ could go thether, but those ỹ wer Cafres, howbeit they made a signe to the Image, naming ỹ same our Lady, giuing therby to vnderstãd that it was her Image. The Captain generall supposing the same to be true, fell vpon his knees, with ỹ rest of ỹ company making their prayers: but one whole mine was Iohn de Sa-

Holy vvater of Calicut

Holy ashes.

The Generall deceiued, cõmitteth Idolatry vvith the Diuell.

Digitized by Google

ly, being in doubt whether ỹ same church wer of christians or not, for ỹ he saw so mõstrous Images painted on ỹ wals, as he fel on his knees said, If this be ỹ diuel, I worship god. The Captaine Generall that heard him say so, looking vpon him laughing. The Catuall and his companie as they came before this Chappell, did fall downe flat vppon the ground with their hands before them, and this they did three times, and afterward they arose and made their prayers standing.

How and after what sort the Captaine Generall was receiued in Calicut, & how hee tolde the king his message which he carried. Cap. 17.

From this place he went forward on his way, vntill such time he came to Calicut, and at the entering of the same, they carried him to the rest of his company to another Pagode, like vnto that which he had seene before, and when that he would haue entered into the Citie, the people were so many, as well of those that came forth of the same for to see our men, as also of those that went with him, that for the multitude of them, he could not goe in the streets, insomuch that the Generall meruailed to see so many people: and when as he saw himselfe to be there, he gaue God great thankes, for bringing him vnto that Citie, most humbly desiring him, so to guide him, that he might returne to Portingale, with his whole request & desire. After that he had gone a while in that streete, into which he entered, for that the people wer so many that he could not passe through it, insomuch that those that did carry him vpon his Andor, were driuen to go with the Catuall into a house. Whether came to beare the Captaine Generall companie, the Catualls brother who was a noble man, and sent by the kings commaundement to accompany him to the kings pallaice, who also brought with him many Nayers, and before them went manye Trumpets and Sagbuts, vppon the which they went all

ſounding. And alſo there was one Nayre which carried a Calcever which he ſhot of, now & then. After ẏ the Captaine generall & this noble man was thus ioyfully receiued, they toke their way ſtraight to ẏ pallaice, with a great noiſe, & which thoſe inſtruments & the people together made, which after ẏ the Catuals brother was come, gaue place & followed after them, with as great obedience as if ẏ king had ben there in his owne perſon. There went along with thẽ fully three thouſand men with their wepons, beſids thoſe ẏ ſtood vpon ẏ penthouſes, & at their doores, which wer wout number. The Captaine generall was very glad to ſee how well he was receiued, & ſaid vnto thoſe ẏ he caried wt him, with a mery coũtenance, how litle do they thinke in Portingale of this our great receiuing, & with this they came to ẏ kings pallace an houre before ẏ Sun ſet. The kings pallace (leauing aſide ẏ the ſame was made of earth) was very great, which ſeemed to be of a goodly building, for ẏ great multitude of trees which did appeare betweene ẏ houſes, & theſe wer ſtãding in goodly gardẽs, in ẏ which were plaſat both of ſweet hearbs, & fountains of water to recreate ẏ king withall, for ẏ he neuer goeth frõ this pallace till ẏ he departeth from Calicut. Out of this pallace there came fourth Caimales, & other noble men to receiue ẏ captain generall, which brought him to a certein great court ẏ was right before ẏ gates, & frõ thence they went into 4. other ſeuerall yards or courts. At ẏ gate of each of which, ther wer .v. porters, which gates they paſſed wt giuing ẏ people many & ſundry blows, which ẏ porters beſtowed vpõ thẽ to make rome, ẏ we might go in: & being come to ẏ laſt gate which was in ẏ houſe where the king himſelf was, ther came forth an old little man, which was Bramene Maior of ẏ kings houſe, who imbraced the captaine generall, & caried him in wt thoſe ẏ wer with him. Bramene Maior is the kings high Priest, & the chiefeſt of the religious mẽ of his gentility. At this entring the people wonderfully preſſed theſelues to go in, for that they ſe the king but by great chaunce, as going but few times abroad out of his pallace, & wold therfore haue entered wt our mẽ to ſe him. The multitude was ſo great ẏ there wer ſome of

The deſcriptiõ of the kings pallaice.

Digitized by Google

thē killed, as also ther had ben two of our mē so vsed, if so be ẏ they had not gone before, & it had small profited to lay on ẏ people wᵗ their staues to ẏ end to make more rome, if so be ther had not ben many of thē hurt, wherwᵗ they gaue place ẏ our mē might enter. Moreouer those noble mē which did accompany the Captaine general, at this third gate entred into the house wher the king was, the which was very great: all the same was cōpassed about wᵗ seats made of timber, one aboue ẏ other as the Theatres are: the flore of the same was al couered ouer wᵗ grēne veluet, & the hangings about the wals were of silke of sundry colours. The king himself was of colour brown, & of a great stature & of good yeres, he was lieng vpon his Estrado ẏ which was couered ouer wᵗ a cloth of white silke & gold & a rich estate ouer him, Estrado is a seat made of bords. On his head he had a night cap, made much like vnto a salet, after ẏ old fort which was couered ouer wᵗ stone & pearle, & in his ears he ware iewels of ẏ same sort. He had vpō him a iacket of fine cotten, ẏ buttons wherof were of great pearle, & the button holes were of gold thred, he had about his middle a white cloth made of ẏ forsaid cottē, ẏ which reched down vnto his knees, ẏ fingers of his hāds & toes wer ful of rings of gold, in ẏ which were set very fine stone, & on his armes & legs many bracelets of golde: hard to this Estrado, there was a certein pewer ẏ which had a high fot wrought al of gold, & is of ẏ making of ẏ Flanders cups, & that plaine, albeit they are greater & not so deepe: in this was ẏ Vitele which the king doth chaw in his mouth, wᵗ salt & Areca, which is an apple no bigger thē a nut in Conserua. This is eatē in all ẏ Indias, for ẏ the same doth make a good breth, driueth ẏ stomack & killeth ẏ thirst, which being chawed in peces hee throweth ẏ same out of his mouth, & taketh another. And for ẏ the king shuld not swallow ẏ same downe, there is prepared a vessel of gold for him to spit in, which is as big or litle bigger thē a dish, hauing a fot also of gold. Also he hath a fountaine of gold which is ful of water wherwᵗ hee washeth his mouth, when he had made an end of chawing this Vitele which he is accustomed to take.

The description of ẏ kings presence chamber.

the kings Vitele.

This

Digitized by Google

This Vitele is ministred vnto him by an olde man which standeth hard by the Estrado, all the others that are in this place holde their left hands afore their mouths, to the end their breath should not come where the king is, who taketh the same for great discurtesie, to spit or to sneese, & therefore there is none that breatheth afore the king. The Captaine Generall being come into this house, made reuerence to the king, after the vse of the Countrie, which is to stoope or bowe downe three times, lifting vp his hands as one that praiseth God. The king immediatly made signes vnto him as willing him to draw nere vnto him, and commaunded him to sit downe in one of those seates which I haue spoken of, who being thus set, the rest of his men did enter and made him the like reuerence, whom the king commaunded likewise to sit down right ouer against him, and that there should be giuen them water for their hands, that they might with the same refresh themselues since they were very hot, for although it was winter yet it was hot. After ỹ they had washed their hands, he commaunded to be giuen them Figges and Iacas to eate, and that forth with, which they did receiue with a good will. The king was very glad to see them eate, who was very earnest in looking vpon them, and did laugh thereat. Afterward they tooke occasion to talke with the old man that ministred vnto him this Vitele, and in the meane time our men did call for water, for that they were a thirst, the which was giuen them to drinke by an Ewer of golde, and when our men did vnderstand ỹ order of their drinking was to hold their cup of height ouer their mouths, for ỹ the Malabars do take the same for an iniurie to touch ỹ cup with their lips, they did therfore hold the same ouer their mouth, in that order that part of the water fell into their throates & made some of them to cough, & vnto others it fell besides their mouths, and vpon their faces, which did runne downe vppon their breasts. All this the king was very glad to see, who looking towards the Captaine Generall, spake vnto him by an interpretour, willing him to speak vnto those that were

The custome in drinking.

there

Digitized by Google

there, & to tell them his pleasure, & likewise to report vnto him of theirs, with this the Captaine Generall was nothing contented, for ỳ he thought the same a disgracing vnto him, & answered by ỳ interpretor ỳ he was the king of Portingales Ambassadour, which was a mighty king, & that the christian princes did not vse to receiue their imbassage by a third person, but by themselues, & that before very few, & those ỳ were of great credit. And for that he did accustome the same order in ỳ other countries from whence he came, he wold not therfore vtter his imbassage but only vnto ỳ king himself, vnto which the king answered ỳ he liked wel therof, & that it shuld be so obserued, & immediatly he commaunded the Captaine Generall & Fernan Martines to be carried vnto another chamber which was adorned with ỳ like estate as the other was, & as wel hanged, & after ỳ the Captaine general was ther, ỳ king came thether also, but our men remained where they wer first, & this was about the Sun set. The king as soone as he was come into this chamber went to his estrado, there came no more with him but his interpretor & the Bramene Mayor, & the olde man which doth alwayes giue this Vitele vnto ỳ king, & controler of his house. The king & they being ther together, he asked of ỳ captain general of what part of ỳ world he was & what he wold haue: wherunto he answered, that he was an Ambassadour of a christian king of ỳ Occident part, & of a kingdome called Portingale, besides many others, inso much ỳ he is of a great power both in possessions & people, & much more in riches, & all other things necessarie, more then any other king of those parts, & hath so ben for ỳ space of these .x. yeres, so ỳ those ỳ haue ben kings his predecessours, hauing the same brought vnto them, how ỳ in the Indias there were christian kings & great noble men, in especiall ỳ king of Calicut, they were moued the rather to send to discouer ỳ same by their Captaines, & to make friendship with the king of ỳ country, & to take them for brothers as reason doth bind the king his Maister now to do, & to visit them by his Ambassadors, not ỳ he hath any need of their

The message that was sent to ỳ king of Calicut from ỳ king of Portingal

Digitized by Google

riches, for that in his owne countries of golde & ſiluer and other things of great value, he hath more therof then nede did require. And as for thoſe Captaines whom he did ſend vnto this diſcouerie, they haue gone in the ſame a yeare or two, vntill ſuch time as they haue conſumed their victuals and without finding of that which they ſought for, haue returned to Portingale, & haue in vaine ſpent great ſums of money. But the king Don Manuel which reigneth as now, & is deſirous to make an end of this enterpriſe, which was begun ſo long time agone, for that to them ther ſhuld not lack ſufficient victuals, as there did vnto the others before, did therfore giue him three ſhippes that were laden therwith, commaunding him not to returne to Portingale without the diſcouery of that king of the chriſtians which is Lord of Calicut. And if ſo be ý he ſhuld returne without bringing him relation therof, he would then commaund his head to be cut off. And further he willed him ý if ſo be ý he ſhould chaunce to arriue at the place where the king was, to deliuer him two letters, which he wold preſent vnto him the next day, for ý it was then ſomwhat late. And alſo that he ſhould tell him that he was his friend & brother, requeſting him that ſince that he doth ſend ſo far of to ſeeke him out; that in recompence thereof he would accept of his kindred, and friendſhip, and alſo that he woulde ſend him his Ambaſſadour for the better confirmation of the ſame, and ý frõ thence forth they wold viſit one the other with their embaſſadours, as it is accuſtomed amongſt chriſtian kings.

An Ambaſſadour promiſed from Calicut.

The king ſhewed himſelfe to bee well pleaſed with this Embaſſage, for he tolde the Captaine Generall that hee was very well welcome. And ſince that the king of Portingale would be his friend & brother, he would be the like vnto him, and vpon the ſame wold ſend him his Embaſſadour, which thing the Captaine Generall did deſire moſt earneſtly, for that he durſt not ſhew himſelfe afore ý king his maſter wout him. The king did therfore promiſe him ſo to do, & that forthwith, he wold diſpatch him thether. After ý he was deſirous to know ý whole eſtate of ý king of Por-

Digitized by Google

Portingale perticularly, & how far of ẏ countrie laye from Calicut, & how long he had ben vpon that voiage. And for ẏ part of the night was well spent, ẏ king willed him to retire, demaunding of him first, whether he would goe lye amongst the Moores or amongst the Christians, who answered that he wold lye with neither of them, but alone, & by himself. The king vpon his answere commanded a certein Moore which was his factor to go & accompany ẏ Captaine generall, & cõmanded to giue him al things ẏ wer necessary.

How the Captaine Generall was minded to sende a present to the king, but his company would not consent to the same, & how the Moores began to bring the Captaine generall out of credit with the king. cap. 18.

THe Captaine generall being dispatched to go toward his lodging (although ẏ foure houres of the night were past) the Catual & the others ẏ had accompanied him before, did now the like, & they all going a foot, ther fell such raine, that ẏ streets ran full therof, & therefore he was driuen to cõmaund some of his men to carry him vpon their backs, (not for the water only) but for ẏ it would be late or euer ẏ he could come to his lodging, with this ẏ Captaine generall was so angry, ẏ he complained vpon ẏ kings Factor, demaunding whether he meant to carry him about the citie all ẏ night or not, who answered ẏ he could do no otherwise, for ẏ ẏ city was great & scattered, & so he carried him to his owne house, to rest himselfe a while. And afterward he gaue him a horse, vpon ẏ which he might ride. And for ẏ this horse was wõ out a saddle, ẏ Captaine wold not accept the offer, saieng, ẏ yet rather he wold go a foot, & so he went vntill such time he came to his lodging, where those ẏ did accompany him, left him in a good lodging. And before his comming, his men had brought thether his stuffe, where ẏ Captaine generall hauing rested himselfe, & being in great ioy to see so good beginning of his business, determined on the next day being Tewsdaie, to send a present to the king.

Digitized by Google

And for that he knew he could not ſend the ſame, but that the Factor and the Catuall ſhould haue the ouerſight therof, did therefore ſende for them that they might haue the view thereof, who being come, he ſhewed the ſame vnto them, which was foure Capuſis of graine, and fiue hattes, foure braunches of Cozall, twelue Almaſares, a fardell of Braſſe, in the which there were ſeauen peeces, a Cheſt of Sugar, two Barrels of Oile, & two of honnie. The Factor and the Catuall hauing ſeene theſe parcels, began to laugh therat, ſaieng, that ỹ ſame was nothing to preſent the king withall, for that the poꝛeſt Merchant that commeth to his poꝛt doth giue him much moꝛe then the ſame, wiſhing him that ſince he would néds giue him a preſent, to ſende him ſome golde, for that the king woulde not accept any other thing. At this their anſwere the Captaine generall was offended, & ſo he ſhewed himſelfe to be, ſaieng, that if ſo be he were a Merchaunt oꝛ that his comming thether were to trade, he would then haue bꝛought him golde: But he was no Merchaunt but an Ambaſſadour, which was the cauſe he bꝛought none with him, & that this which he doth now ſend to ỹ king of Calicut, is his owne goods, & not ỹ king his Maiſters, who for that he did not certeinly know that hée ſhould haue met with the king of Calicut, did therfoꝛe giue him nothing to preſent him withal: but at his next returne knowing for certeintie that he ſhall finde him, the king his Maiſter will ſend him golde, ſiluer, & other rich thiings. To this they anſwered and ſayd that it might be ſo, howbeit it was accuſtomed in that countrie, ỹ whatſoeuer ſtranger he be that doth come & ſpeake with the king, he bꝛingeth him a preſent, which is accoꝛding to ỹ greatnes of his eſtate. Vnto which the Captaine generall did reply, ſaieng ỹ it was good ỹ their cuſtome ſhuld be kept, & that for the preſeruation of the ſame, he did make hem this preſent, which is of no greater value, for the cauſe aboue ſaid: And therefoꝛe he deſired them to ſuffer him to carie the ſame to the king, which if ſo be ỹ they would not let him doe that, then hée would ſend the ſame backe to his ſhippes againe.

A preſent for ỹ king of Calicut.

They

They aunſwered him that immediately he might ſo do, as he laſt determined, for that they would not conſent that the ſame ſhould be carried to the King. With this aunſwere the Captaine generall was very angry, and ſaid vnto them, that ſince they would not conſent that he ſhould ſende that preſent to the King, he would therefore go himſelfe & ſpeak with him, and would now returne to his ſhips. This was his meaning, to enforme the King what had paſt about this preſent. They ſaid ý it was well done ſo to do, but for ſo much as they ſhould remaine with him in the Court a good while, it were for them very neceſſary to goe about a little buſineſſe in the meane ſpace, which they will go to doe, and immediately retourne to goe with him, ſince that the King wold not be pleaſed that he ſhuld go without them: for ſo much as he was a ſtraunger, and for that there were many Moores in the Citie. The Captaine generall giuing credite to their wordes concerning their retourne, immediately aunſwered them that he would tarry for their comming: but they did not returne all that daye, for that they were enimies to the Captaine generall, by reaſon of the Moores, who were his enimies alſo, and had receiued newes what he had done in Monſambieke, and of the taking of the Sambuco in Mylynde, and that we were Chriſtians, and that our comming was to diſcouer Calicut. Bontaybo alſo told the Moores, that Spices were eſteemed in Portingale very much, and that as he iudged they wer not come to diſcouer Calycut, but to ſettle there a trade, and to carrie Spices into their Countrey, in the which there is of all ſorts of Merchandis that come to Calycut by the way of the ſtraights, and great ſtore of golde and ſiluer, and hauing the Trade ſetled there, would redounde vnto the King great profite thereby. To the which wordes the Moores gaue great care, and made their reckoning vpon Bontaybos ſpeach, and allowed the ſame: That we being Chriſtians and once come to ſettle a Trade in Calycut, their commeditie then would fall of the price they were at, and ſo would abate the moſt part of their gaine. About this they layed their heads toge-

Treaſon conſpired againſt the fleete

Digitized by Google

ther, to worke all meanes they could poſſible with the king, to take the Captaine generall priſoner, and to commaunde his ſhips to be taken alſo, and to kill all our men, and this the rather, for that in no wiſe they ſhould retourne to Portingale, to carry newes of Calicut. And hereupon they ioyned thoſe that were in credit with the King, and went vnto him, and one in the name of them all, ſaid vnto the king: That he ſhoulde not deceiue himſelfe with our men, for that the Captaine Generall was no Emballadour but a theefe, that went to rob, which they knew for moſt certaine by their Factors, which had certified them, that aſſone as we were come to Monſambicke, wher the Xeque went to viſite the Captaine generall aboord his ſhippe, and ſent him preſents, and eſtabliſhed with him friendſhip, and alſo giuing him a Pilot to carrie him to Calicut, whether he ſaid that he would goe. He after this ſhot his Ordinaunce at the towne, with the which he killed of his Subiects, and tooke certaine Sambucos laden with Marchaunts, and handeled both him and his like vnto Enimies. And being departed from thence to Mombaſſa, likewiſe vnder ỳ color of friendſhip, ſaieng that he was bound towarde Calicut, the King therevpon tooke occaſion to ſend to viſite the Captaine generall aboord his ſhip, requeſting him to enter into his harbour, who being determined ſo to doe, whether that it was for that he ſaw within the ſame many ſhips, or ỳ he thought he could not make his partie good, did flye away ſo faſt, that he left one of his Ankors behinde him; and from thence alſo the Pilot ran away, which he caried from Monſambicke, for the ill lyfe which he lead with him, with whipping of him, and putting of him vnto other puniſhment. And being departed from Mombaſſa, and come nere vnto Mylynde, did take perforce a Sambuco laden with Moores, of ỳ which there were ſome that dyed in the battaile, & others that are yet aliue remaining captiues. And for that thoſe that were captiues willed him to carry them to Mylynde, ſaieng, that there they would give him a newe Pilot to carrye him to Calycut, by that meanes onely he came thether. And having there

the Mores oratiõ to the king

Digitized by Google

there by the king of Mylyrde were receiued very well, yet the Captaine generall would no more come a lande, fearing the hurts which he had done, and taking the Moze pꝛiſoner which the king had ſent to viſit him, and would not deliuer him, vntill ſuch time that he had a Pilot ſent him. Whereby it might well be conſidered, that if ſo be that he were an Embaſſadour and were come to maintaine peace, he would neuer haue vſed thoſe diſoꝛders, but wold haue bꝛought the king a pꝛeſent with him. Of this his demeanour, we giue thée to vnderſtand, as our dutie bindeth vs, that now thou maiſt doe as thou ſhalt thinke good therein. With this newes the king remained amazed, and told the Moꝛes that he would determine himſelfe what ſhall be thought moſt conuenient: they ſeeing this, thought the ſame not to be the waye to cauſe the king to doe as they would haue him, and did afterward tell the Catuall thereof, who was in great credite with the king, requeſting him to perſwade with the king, not to receiue any ſuch Embaſſage as that was, and the cauſe thereof the rather was, that he toke this pꝛeſent foꝛ ſo ſmall a valew. With this the Catuall went immediately to the king, who told him what the Moꝛes had ſaid, to whom the Catuall gaue counſaile, to doe as the Moꝛes had requeſted him: immediately the king began to change his countenaunce againſt the Captaine generall, but not ſo much as the ſame might be perceiued. But as ſoone as the Moꝛes had knowledge by the Catuall concerning the pꝛeſent that the Captaine generall would haue ſent to ỹ king, and that he would not conſent thereunto, the Moꝛes toke occaſion to go to ỹ Generalls lodging with a fained friendſhip offering themſelues to inſtruct him what he ſhould beſt doe, and talking with him they ſayd, that in that Country it was accuſtomed that thoſe the whith came from other places about buſineſſe with the king, ſhoulde bring him a Pꝛeſent, and therefoꝛe it were good that he did ſende him one. The Captaine Generall being offended with that iniurye they hadde offered him, and that the Catuall and the Kings Factour would not conſent thereunto, did

The king remaineth doubtfull vvhat to doe.

The fained friendſhippe of the Mores

Digitized by Google

did vpon the same take occasion to shew them those pieces the which he was minded for to send, who having seene the same, they saide to the Generall, that the Catuall and the Factor had great reason to be offended thereat, for that the same was not a present for to be sent to a King, neyther would they wish him to send it, for that it would be iudged that by the sending thereof he did mocke the King: All this they talde him, and as they said as friends, in shewing him their minde. Bontaybo told him also in the same manner, mouning what was the cause he brought no other things, since there was plentie of all things in Portingale? But the Captaine generall excused himselfe, saieng: that he was not certaine that he should come to Calycut.

¶ How the Captaine generall returning spake with the King of Calycut, & how he gaue him licence for returne vnto his ships. Chap. 19.

ALL this daye the Captaine generall was greatly offended, for that the Catuall & the Factor were not returned, so that he was once determined to goe to the Court without them, yet he thought best to tarry till the next daye, on which in the afternoone they came, with whome he shewed himselfe to be offended for their long tarrying. But they did answere him touching that matter nothing at all, but talked of other things, and so went with him to the Court. And for that the King was somewhat changed, as I haue said, against the Captaine Generall, he did not commaund him to come into his presence in three houres after his comming to the Courte, and then commaundement was giuen ther should come no more in with the Ambassadour but two of his owne men, with the which he was offended, for y he thought the same seperating from his men, was not meant well, did therfore carry

Digitized by Google

carry with him Fernan Martines, and one Diego Diaz, the which was his Secretary. Being come where the King was, he did not receiue him so well as at the first time, but said vnto him with a seuere countenaunce, that he had tarried for him all the day before, and he came not. The Captaine generall aunswered, that he did deferre his coming, for that he found himselfe weary by reson of the long way, for he was very loath to tell him the cause why he said, for that he woulde not giue the King occasion to talke of the present that he would haue sent him: But it did well appeare that the Catuall and the Facks would not haue hindred the sending of the same vnto the King, but for y they well knew, he would haue made small account thereof. And also they must of force haue told him that they had seene the same. Neuertheleſſe it coulde not be excused, but that the King spake vnto the Captaine generall thereof immediately saying: how that he had tolde him that he was belonging to a great and rich King, and yet he brought no present from him, but an Embassage of friendship onelye, and therefore he could not tell what friendship he woulde haue with him, since that he did send him nothing. Vnto this the Captaine generall did aunswere, that there was no maruel that he did bring him nothing, for that he came not in assuraunce that he should meete with him. But now since that he hath seene him he should well perceiue what his King & Maker will hereafter sende him, if so be that God wil giue him leaue to carry newes of this his discouery. And if so be that he will giue credite to his Letters which hee did bring with him, he shall then see what the King doeth send him word of. The King in steede of demaunding his Letters, asked him whether the King his Maker did sende him to discouer stones or men, and if so be that he did send him to discouer men, how doth it chaunce then that hee sent him no present. And since that it is manifest that hee had brought him nothing, he sayd as then that it was told him that he had a Sancta Maria in golde, requesting of him the same.

The king quarrelleth with the Captaine Generall.

Digitized by Google

The Captaine generall was partly aſhamed to ſe the King ſo altered, for that he had not brought him a preſent. And now moreouer to demaund without all honeſtie that Image. To whom he aunſwered, that the Sancta Maria, which they tolde him of, was made of woode, and gylded ouer and not of Maſſie golde. And although that it were (yet would he not depart therewith) ſoraſmuch as the ſame had preſerued him in the Sea, and had brought the ſame from his Countrey. The King did not reply vpon this anſwere, but demaunded thoſe Letters the which the King had ſent him: whereof the one was in the Portingale tongue, the other in the Arabian language. Theſe he tolde him were ſent in this order, for that the King his Maſter did not know whether of theſe two langauges was vnderſtode in his Countrey. Wherefore he deſired that ſince the Portingale language was not vnderſtod in his Countrey but the Arabian, and that there were Chriſtians of the Indias that did vnderſtand the ſame, one of thoſe might read his Letter, and the rather for that the Moores are enimies to the Chriſtians, of whom he was afeard, leaſt that they ſhould chaunge the ſenſe thereof. The King commaunded them ſo to bee read: howbeit there could be founde no Indian that coulde read the ſame, or at the leaſt would ſhew himſelfe that hee could read them. The Captaine generall ſeeing that there was no other remedy, but ẏ the Moores muſt nedes read the ſame, was driuen then to requeſt the King, that Bontaybo might be one of them. This was done, for ẏ as he thought he would ſpeake and vſe more truth then the others, for the acquaintaunce they had with him. The King commaunded the ſame to be read by other three, who hauing read ẏ ſame firſt of all to themſelues, & afterward with a loude voyce declared to the King the effect thereof, the which was, That as ſone as the King of Portingale had knowledge, ẏ he was one of the mightieſt Princes of all the Indias, & a Chriſtian, he was deſirous to haue a trade & a friendſhip with him, for that he might haue out of his Countrey, Spices, the which he hath in great plentie, for which there commeth diuers

The effect of ẏ king of Portingales Letters to the king of Calycut

ners from many places of the world thether to buy ỳ same. And therefore if so be he will giue him license to send for the same, that then he will send vnto him from his kingdome many things which he hath not in his, as his Captaine generall and Embassadour will tell him. And if so bee that with those things he were not pleased, he will sende him money both of golde and siluer to buy them withall, & how that as well of his Merchaundize as of the money, ỳ Captaine generall could shew him part. The King hearing this, as he was desirous that for the increase of his rents there should come many Merchaunts vnto Calycut, shewed himself to be well pleased with this letter, & also made vnto the Captaine generall a better countenaunce then he did before, & asked him what Merchaundize ther were in Portingale. He named many, shewing how that of all he had brought with him part, and also of their money, requesting him license to goe aboard for the same, and in the meane while he wold leaue in his lodging foure or fiue of his men. The King giuing more credite to that which he spake, then to that the Moores had told him, said vnto him, ỳ he might go in a good houre, & carie his men with him, for there was no necessitie that they should remaine a lande, & that he should bring his Merchandize, & sell them as well as he could. With this license he remained well content, for (as he saw ỳ King make him at the first an ill countenaunce) so he thought ỳ he wold not haue giuen him ỳ same, & with this license he went first to his lodging, being by ỳ Kings commaundement accompanied with the Catuall: and forsomuch as that daye was all spent, he would not goe aboard that night.

¶ How the Captaine generall hauing license of the King to go to his ships, was staid by the Catuall in Pandarane. Chap. 20.

The nexte daye after, which was the last daye of Maye, the Catuall sent to the Captaine generall a Horse, howbeit without anye furniture to the same, vpon which hee might goe to Pandarane: And for that the Horse came after that order, he would

Digitized by Google

not accept his offer, but rather requested him for one of his Anoyes, the which he sent him immediately, and on the same he went to Pandarene, and all his men came after him on foote. There went to beare him company many Nayres, the Catuall did remaine in Calicut, and when the Moyes had notice that he should there staye, and that the Captaine generall was gone towards his ships, supposing that he went for altogether, were sore amazed therewith, whereupon the Moyes take occasion to goe to the Catuall, with large offers of money to pursue the Captaine generall, and under a fained pretence to lay hands upon him and to take him prisoner, for that they would finde occasion to kill him: and he by this meanes should remaine in no fault thereof at all. And albeit that the King would punish him forasmuch as he did keepe him prisoner, yet they would not feare but to get him his pardon. With this bribe and promise he did depart immediately, and went in such hast after him, that hee past by our men which did remaine behinde the Captaine generall, for that they were not able to goe much, by reason of the heate. The Catuall having ouertaken the Captaine generall, asked him why he did make so much hast, or wher he wer now running away: this was spoken by signes, ỹ which the Captaine generall did vnderstand, who answered him also by signes that he did runne away to flye the heat. And being come to Pandarene, for that his men as yet did not appeare, the Captaine generall tolde the Catuall that hee would not goe into the village, vntill his men were come, and there he tarried for them in a house, wherein he rested himselfe from the raine: howbeit they came not vntill it was almost Sunne set, for so long he did tarry for them because they had lost their waye. But after that they were come, the Captaine generall tolde them, that then it was not time to leaue him, whereas if so be that they hadde come sooner, hee hadde bene as then in his Shippe.

the Mores make a newe conspiracie.

Whereupon, immediatelye hee did demaunde of the Catuall a Boate or Pinnace for to goe aboorde in, who for that hee pretended an other thing, answered him,

Digitized by Google

him, that it was verye late, and that the shippes did ride farre, and going in the night he might misse them, and therefore that it were a great deale better to tarie vntill ỹ nert day. To ỹ which the Captaine generall made him a plaine answere, that if so be that he would not giue him an Almadias or Pinnace, he woulde immediatly returne to the king & complain vpon him, forsomuch as the king had sent him to his ships, and he would seeme to stay him, which was very ill done, since that he was a Christian as they were. This was spoken with such a coulour as if he wold haue returned to Calicut. The Catuall for to dissemble with him the more, did make him a countenance as though he would giue him thirtie Almadias, if he woulde haue so many. Nowbeit he tolde him, that he did counsell him for the best, and to remaine. But if so be that he would goe he was contented therewith. Thus on one parte he sent to seeke out Almadies or Pinnaces, and on the other part commaunded the owners of the same, to hide themselues out of the way, because they shuld not deliuer the same. In the meane season while they went to seeke those Pinnaces, the Captaine Generall went along the water side, and for that he had an euill suspition of their dealing, for that which they had done to him in Calicut, he commaunded Gonsallo Peres, a Marriner, with other two of his men, to go before as fast as they could, & see if they could finde Nicholas Coello wᵗʰ his boats to wil him to keepe himself out of the way, forsomuch as he was afeard least ỹ the Catual wold send to take his boats, with all those that were with him in the same. Gonsallo Peres with the other went about that businesse whilest the Catuall went in the meane season so leaserly to prouide for this boat, that the night drew on, so that it was three houres within night ere he coulde heare of any thing what hee had done, and what for that, & also to tarrye the comming of those that went to Nicholas Coello, the Captaine Generall was the willinger to stay there that night. After that the Catuall had placed the Generall in a Mores house, tolde him that he woulde

Dissimulation in ỹ Catuall

Digitized by Google

goe to seeke out Gonsallo Peres, & the other two that went with him. Howbeit he came not backe till it was the morning. And as soone as the Captaine Generall had sight of him, immmediatly he required a boate for to goe in vnto his shippes. But as soone as the Catuall heard him, he then spake vnto his Nayres that were there present in his language, who afterward willed the Captaine Generall to commaunde his ships to be brought nere vnto the shoare, and that being done he shoulde haue license to goe his waye, with this the Captaine Generall was somewhat afeard, howbeit he aunswered him with a stout stomacke, that as long as he was on land, he would commaund no such matter to be done, forsomuch as then his brother woulde iudge him to remaine in prison, and that he did commaunde the same to be done more for feare then any thing els, wherupon he wold immediatly depart toward Portingal, without him.

The Catuals purpose opened.

To this the Catuall made answere with the others that were with him, speaking with a stoutnesse, that if so be that he would not doe that which was willed him to doe, ỳ then they will not let him go a boord. To the which shewing himselfe to be therewith offended, he made answere that if so be that they would not let him go, that then he wold returne to the king of Calicut, and make his complaint, who if then he would stey him in his countrie, ỳ then he would be verie glad to dwel in the same. The Catuall thereupon willed him so to do, & to goe to the king to make his complaint, but yet for all his saieng he would not consent thervnto, for that he had commaunded the doores of his lodging to be kept shut, placing within the same sundry Nayres with their weapons. And if so that any of our men would goe forth, there were appointed many of the enimyes to withstand them. Neuertheleſſe it was Gods pleasure that the Catuall durst not venture to kill the Captaine Generall, nor yet any of his men for all that the Moores habde brybed him with a great summe of money, and for all that he was in great credit with the king, for he rode in such a

feare

Digitized by Google

feare thereof, that he durſt not doe it.

The cauſe why he required the ſhippes to be brought to the ſhoare ſide was, for that they being there, the Moores might the better laye the ſame a boarde, and ſo take them and kill all thoſe that were within them, which thing for that it did ſo manifeſtly appeare to the Captaine Generall, he would not commaund the Shippes to bee brought anye nerer. And alſo for that the ſame was ſo apparaunt vnto the others of his men that were with him. They gaue him counſaile not to deale therein. The Catuall ſeeing that he would not commaunde thoſe Shippes to bee brought neere the ſhoare, and for that there was no cauſe to ſtaye him or offer him any wrong, and ſeeing that hee could not kill him, did then beginne to requeſt him to bring his Sailes and the Rudder of the Shippes a lande. Wherewith the Captaine Generall beganne to laugh, ſayeing, that he would neither doe the one, nor yet the other, ſince that the king did giue him free licenſe to goe without any condition.

And therefore hee willed him to doe what he would, and how that of all the iniuryes which hee had offered him, the king ſhoulde bee made priuie, who he knewe woulde doe him iuſtice, but yet for all this, both hee and his remayned in ſome feare of ſuſpect, although they did not outwardly ſhewe the ſame.

At length the Captaine Generall with the reſt feigning themſelues to be an hungred, and that they were vnprouided of victualls, did requeſt him that ſome of his men might goe to prouide the ſame, and hee would remaine alone, but for all that the Catuall woulde not agree thereunto. Nowe our men beeing in feare to ſee themſelues in ſuch a daunger. Then came Gonſallo Peres, ſuppoſing that the Captaine Generall had ben at his liberty, and that they were tarrieng for him and the others, who tolde him that hee hadde mette with Nicholas Coello, and with the others which tarryed for him with theyr Boates a lande. The Generals vneffectuall excuſe.

This

Digitized by Google

This newes being brought to the Captaine Generall, he was afeard least the Catuall should know thereof, which if he had knowne indeed he would haue sent Pinnaces and many men in them, for to haue taken them. Therefore did he procure by all the meanes he could, that Gonsallo Peres shoulde secretlye returne, from thence into their shippes, and put themselues in good order. And also that he should goe with them and informe them in what case he doth remaine. Nicholas Coello hauing receiued this dispatch, did forthwith depart, and that in hast, and immediatly after he was departed, the Catuall was aduertised thereof, who sent after him sundrie Pinnaces well appointed, but yet they could not ouertake him, and therefore they returned againe vnto the Catuall. Then the Catuall after that they were come did once more request the Captaine Generall to write vnto his brother to bring the shippes nere to the lande, but he could not perswade the Captaine Generall so to doe, saieng that if he should doe it, yet his brother would not consent therevnto, and although he would, yet he knew that the companye would not. To this the Catuall did replye, that he shoulde not make him beleeue that, forsomuch as he did well know that all things should be done as he would commaund. Howbeit the Captaine Generall would write no such letter, for that he was afeard of the bringing of the ships so nere the shoare, for the causes aboue mentioned.

Gonsallo Peres sent back to the ships

¶How the Catuall was contentd that the Captaine Generall should goe to his ships, & after that what chaunced. cap. 21.

After this sorte they spent that day, in the which our men remained in great feare, forsomuch as in the night they were put in a great yarde that was vnderwrote layed with Brick, and compassed about with walls, & also had to keepe them far more men

Digitized by Google

men then they had in the day. Then the Captaine Generall perceiued by the countenance of his men ẏ they feared leaſt they ſhuld be departed ẏ one from ẏ other ẏ nert day after, as he himſelfe ſuſpected the lyke, although he gaue no outward ſhew thereof, but rather had a confidence, that as ſone as the king of Calicut had knowledge after what ſorte they were ſtayed, would commaunde them to be releaſed, for that he did neuer vſe with him double dealing, it was thought that the Catuall did ſtaye the Captaine Generall after this order, becauſe he ſhould giue him ſome reward. And for that he would giue as it were no outwarde ſhew that he was offended, he would needs come to ſupper to him that night, at the which they hadde both Rice and Hens, which he commaunded to be bought the day before. The Catuall did much meruaile to ſee how little they did paſſe for their cloſe keeping, after that ſort, and of the great conſtancie of the Captaine Generall, that he woulde not commaund thoſe ſhippes to be brought nere to the ſhoare, nay yet condeſcended to any of the other his requeſt. And for that hee thought that it was but a ſollye to keepe him priſoner, thereby the rather to conſtraine him to doe it, it was Gods pleaſure to put him in the head to ſette him at lybertie, for feare leaſt that the king ſhoulde knowe thereof, for that he gaue him free lybertie to goe to his ſhippes. The next day which was Saterday the ſecond of Iune, hee then tolde him, that ſince he had certified the king that he would bring his Merchandiſe a land, he ſhuld command the ſame to be brought. For it was a cuſtome that whatſoeuer Merchants did come to Calicut, he ſhould immediatly vpon the ſame commaund his Merchandiſe to be brought a land and his men alſo, and they not to returne vnto their ſhips, vntill ſuch time that they had ſolde the ſame, notwithſtanding as ſone as the Merchandiſe were come, he would then let him go aboard his ſhips. And although his woordes were with the Captaine Generall of ſmall credite to ſend vnto his brother a certeine diſpatch for them, yet he did not ſette to tell him, that immediatly he would ſende for them, if ſo

The generals conſtancye marueled at by the Catuall

Digitized by Google

he that they would giue him Almadias or pinnaces, in the which the ſame might be brought, for that his brother woulde not conſent that his boates ſhould come a lande, vntill ſuch time that hee were there himſelf, with this the Catuall was content for that he thought to make himſelf poſſeſſour of the Merchandiſe, hauing a ſpeciall hope that they were of a great valne, as the Captaine Generall had tolde him.

The effect of y Generals letters vnto his brother.

Then he diſpatched two of his men with a letter vnto his brother, in the which he had made relation after what ſorte hee did remaine. And that he had no other iniury offered him, but that he kept his lodging. And for any thing elſe hee was very well, willing him that hee ſhould ſende him part of the Merchaundiſe to content the Catuall withall, that he might let him depart. And after that hee had receiued the ſame, if then hee would not let him go, he would then beleeue that hee did keepe him priſoner, by the king of Calicuts commaundement, who hee knew would not commaund the ſame, except it were to take his ſhippes, which hee would not doe, but hauing time to arme his owne Fleet, & ſo to ſet vppon them, wherefore hee aduertiſed them that if ſo bee he were not ſet at liberty, immediatly after y the Merchandiſe were landed, that then they ſhould not remaine there any longer, but goe their wayes toward Portingale, & informe the king his Maiſter what had chaunced vnto him, and alſo what hee had done, that there might not bee loſt a Countrie of ſo greate a profite for Portingale as that was, and alſo to tell him after what ſort that hee did remaine there, and what confidence hee hadde in his highneſſe that he would ſend him ſuch a Fleete of ſhips and men, that by the ſame hee doth hope to be ſette at liberty, being aſſured that as nowe they woulde not kill him.

He that carried theſe letters being come to Paulo de la Gama, did deliuer them vnto him, giuing vnto him large inſtructions of all that which they had paſt, ſince they did departe. Now Paulo de la Gama hauing ſeene this Letter

which

Digitized by Google

which was sent him from the Captaine Generall, did send immediatlye the merchaundise with an answeere to this Letter, in the which hee sayde, that GOD would not permit him to returne to Portingale without his companye. And if so be that their enimyes would not sette him at lyberty, that then hee did hope in GOD that hee would strengthen those fewe that remained in the Fleet, with whome and with the Ordinance that they have, hee would come and set him at lyberty, and of this hee might make full accompt, and of no other thing. His brothers aply

The Merchaundise being landed, the Captaine Generall did deliver the same vnto the Catuall, and also to Diego Dyas whome he lefte for Factour of the same, and to Alluora de Braga the Scrivenor, who remained in a house which the Catuall had sought out for them. In this space the Captaine Generall made himselfe in a readynesse to goe aborde his shippes, but firste the Catuall did reforme, and make himselfe friendes with him.

After that hee was aborde, hee would send no more Merchaundise a lande, vntill such time hee heard newes the same were solde, neyther yet would goe anye more a lande, because hee would runne in no such daunger, with this the Mores were grievously offended, for that they thought that if so be that he would come a land, that there they might doe him more hurte then a Seaborde.

And for that they would the rather so do, they begamne to make a mocke at the merchandise which he had left a land. Also they wrought all the meanes they could to hinder their sales therof, saieng ỳ they wer litle or nothing worth. Of al this ỳ Captain general was informed, & for ỳ as he thought the king knew nothing of all these things, neither yet what discurtesie the Catuall had offered him, & for that he should vnderstand the cause why the Captaine Generall did not returne a land, neither yet would send any more merchandise, he did therfore send him word within fiue dayes after by his Factour of all that they hadde done vnto him, and also what iniurye the Mores hadde shewed him, deuises of the Mores to entise thē aland.

Digitized by Google

touching their Merchants, promising notwithstanding, that he would not let to be at his commaundement with all the whole Fleet. Then the king seemed to be very greatly offended for that which they had done to ỹ Captaine generall, inasmuch as he had sent him unto his shippes. But for all that the Catuall went unpunished, although he sent the Captaine Generall worde, that he would punish those that had so used him, which out of doubt were naughtie christians, so that it did well appeare that it grieued him verye much to heare thereof. And as touching the Merchaundise he promised to serue whether such as should buye the same, as he did indeede seuen or eyght Merchauntes, which are Gentiles Gusarates, and with his Factour hee sent a Nayre, which was a principall honest man, to the intent hee might remaine in the Factorye with the Factour, to whome hee gaue commaundement diligentlye to beware that there should not come any Moores to kill him.

But for because that this was done but under couloure that the Moores should not seeme to subborne the Merchauntes, they bought nothing, but rather did abate the price, of the which the Moores were verye gladde, and said, that nowe it did well appeare that they were not alone that would not buye of their Merchaundise, yet for all that ther durst come no Moore to the Factorie, they once hauing notice that there was placed a Nayre by the Kinges commaundement. And if so be that before they did not abide or loue vs, they ten times worse loued vs afterwarde, so that whensoeuer any of our men should come a land, they receiued the same as an iniurie done unto them, spitting on the ground, saieng: Portingale, Portingale. But our men which understode their meaning did laugh thereat, to the ende thereby they might see howe little they did esteeme their doinges, for as the Captaine Generall commaunded them to doe. Nowe perceiuing that there was none that would buy of the Merchants, he supposed the cause to be for that they lay in a place where there were no Merchaunts.

And therfore supposing that if so be that they were in Cali-

cut

Digitized by Google

cut, where other Merchants are, he should sell the better, did therefore moue ỹ King of Calicut by a messenger for license to send the same, which he gaue immediately, and commanded the Catuall to see the same brought forthwith, & to such as should carrie them, to see them paid at his owne costes and charges, for that he would not that any thing of ỹ king of Portingales, should be at any charges in his Country, and so it was done: but for all this the Captaine generall wold neuer come more a lande, for that which the Catuall hadde done vnto him, and for that Bontaybo which came to see him manye times, did giue him counsaile so to doe, for that the King was moueable, and therefore it was possible that the Moores would alter his minde, for the great credite that they were of with him. But the Captaine general was very warie, and because that he was a Moore, he woulde not much truste him, neither yet woulde giue him account what he was minded to doe: yet for that he would seeme to haue him in some reputation that he should bring him alwayes newes of that which did passe on shoare, he departed with him both money and other rewards.

mont

Their merchandize paide for by ỹ king him selfe

Bontaybo vsed, but not trusted.

¶ How the Captaine generall being desirous to retourne toward Portingale, sent to demaunde licenſe of the King to haue a Factor and a Scriuener, with such Merchaunts as he thought good: & how the King caused the messenger with one other, that was found a shoare to be craried to prison. Chap. 22.

THe Merchaunts being brought to Calicut, the Captaine generall therewith gaue all his men license to goe and see the Citie of Calycut, & to buye ther what they thought good, so that there went out of each shippe euery day a man, and those being returned, there went immediately others. And as they went on this

Digitized by Google

order, they were carried to the Gentiles houſes wher they had good chere, and alſo when occaſion ſerued might haue among them good lodging. The like courteſie they did receiue in Calicut, beſides they did report vnto our men of all ſuch things as they had, and after the ſelfe ſame manner, our men did beſtow amongſt them part of that they caried, which were bracelets of Braſſe & of Copper, Pewter, and apparell, which they carried to ſell in Calicut, or anye other place, where they might goe as quiet as in Liſhborne.

From the lande there went aboord both Fiſher men & Gentiles to ſell their Fiſh, Cocos and Hennes, which they gaue in trucke of biſket and for ready money. Others ther were that went thether with their children, who carried nothing with them to ſell, but only their going was to ſee our ſhips. The Captaine generall was very glad of their comming, & commanded to giue them meate: this he did for to increaſe the friendſhip betweene the King of Calicut & them. After this order, the ſhips wer neuer without ſome, & thoſe y wer there, remained till ſuch time that night drew on, and then they were bid to goe their waye. After this ſort they ſpent their time till it was the 1. day of Auguſt, the which was the beginning of the ſeaſon wherin they might depart from the Coaſt of the Indias, and alſo for that as then their winter did make an end. The Captaine generall perceiuing the quietneſſe of the people and Countrey, and the familyaritie they vſed with our men, and how quietly they went in Calicut, without receiuing either hurt of the Moores or of the Nayres, did credibly beleeue that this came to paſſe, for that the King of Calycut would haue peace and friendſhip with the King his Maſter, was the occaſion that almoſt in three moneths that our men had trade in Calycut they did receiue no manner hurt, either of the Moores or of the Nayres. He did therfore determine to eſtabliſh the Factorie which was there, with all ſuch Merchandize as he had left at that preſent (although the leaſt parte thereof was ſolde) for that there was now layde a good foundation or ground worke, for the next voyage when it ſhuld pleaſe the King his Maſter

The ende of ỹ vvinter in the Indias.

Digitized by Google

ther to sende againe, and if it might please God to giue him life, that he might bring him newes of this Discouerie, so that it should not be needfull to make any new consent or agreement for the Factorie. And by the counsaile of his Captaines and of the other Principalls of his ships, he sent vnto the King of Calicut a present, of sparkes of sundry coulours, of silkes, Corralls and other things, which was caried vnto him by Diego Dias, desiring the King to pardon him, for that he was so bold as to send him that present, considering he did the same for no other purpose, but onely to shew what seruitour he was of his, who is and will bee alwayes at his commandement, which was the occasion that he sent it, and not for that he thought that things of so smal valew, were of sufficient dignitie, for to represent a King withall of so great a power as he was. And if so be that he had in his custodie, that which he might esteeme or think to be of a more worthie price, he would sende it with a better good will. And for that the time now drew neere ẏ he determined to depart, he ordained for the same, and also if so bee that he did minde to send any Embassadour to the King his Master to confirme the amitie or friendship betweene them, he desired him to commaund him to be in a readinesse, for that he had a confidence that as touching that which he had agreed vpon with his highnesse, as also presuming on ẏ gifts which he had receiued at his hands, ẏ he might as he was desirous, leaue in Calicut that Factor with his Scriuenor & the Merchandize which he had left, not onely for a witnes of a perpetuall peace & friendship setled ther with his highnes, but also for a testimony of the truth of his Embassage, & of that which ẏ King his Master shuld send hereafter, as sone as he had newes of him, & also for confirmatiõ of his discouerie, & to get some credit in Portingale, he did therfore send to kisse his hands, requesting him to send to ẏ king his master one Bahar of cinamon, & another of cloues, & another of some other spices, & as sone as ẏ factor did make any redy mony of his wares, he shuld pay for ẏ same, for so much as at ẏ present he had not wherewith to paye. After that Diego Dias had

had receiued his meſſage, there paſt foure dayes afore the King would conſent that he ſhould come in his preſence, although that he went euery day vnto his Pallaice. After that he had commanded him to come into his preſence, he viewed how and after what ſort he came laden, and thereupon aſked him with a frowning countenance, what it was that he would haue: but Diego Dias at that time was afeard, that he would commaund him to be killed. But after that he had told him his meſſage and would haue deliuered him the preſent, he would not ſee it, but commaunded it to be deliuered to his Factor. The aunſwere that he gaue touching the Captaine generall was, that ſince he would needes goe his waye, he might ſo doe: but firſt or that he doe depart, he muſt giue him 600. Seraſynes, for ſo it was the cuſtome of the Countrey. Diego Dias being returned with this preſent, was accompanied by manye Nayres, which he ſeeing, thought it to be for the beſt: but as ſoone as he was come to the Factorie, they remained at the doore, and would not conſent, that he or any other ſhoulde come forth. And after this proclamation was made in all the Citie, that vpon paine of death there ſhould goe aboord our Fleete no boate or Almadias: but yet notwithſtanding all this Bontaybo went, and gaue warning to the Captaine generall in ſecrete, not to goe a lande, nor conſent that any of his ſhould goe: for that he knew for moſt certaine by the Moores, that if ſo be that he or they ſhoulde ſo doe, the King would commaunde their heads to be ſtroken off. And as touching all his faire words and good entertainment, which he had ſhewed him vnto that preſent, as alſo to giue him a houſe in the which his Merchandize might be layd, as alſo the good entertainment that our men had, was but meere diſſimulation, and to the ende, he might haue taken him a lande with them, ſo haue commaunded them all to be killed, which was wrought by the induſtrie of the Moores onely, which had made the King beleeue, that they were theeues and went a rouing, and that he came not vnto his Harbour, but to ſteale ſuch Merchandize as ſhould be brought to the Citie, and alſo to eſpie the

The kings aunſwere vnto Diego Dias.

Diego Dias kept in priſon.

Countrey,

Digitized by Google

Countrey, and after to come with a great Fleete for to invade the same: In the selfe same order was the Captaine generall informed by two Malabars, which are Gentiles, being therefore now in a studie what was best to be done, having this advertisement for most certaine, as soone as it was night, there came aboorde the Generalls ship, a slaue of the colour blacke, which was naturally borne in Guynee, & belonged vnto Diego Dias and also was a Christian, and had the Portingall tongue very well, who tolde him that Diego Dias and Aluoro de Braga did remain in prison, & what answeare the king of Calycut had made to his message, & what he had commanded to be done with his present, and also what proclamations there were made: Diego Dias, for that he thought good to giue him knowledge of ỹ which had past, had hyred a Fisher man to carrie this messenger, and that in the night season that he might not be knowen: After that the Captaine generall had heard all this, he was much offended therewith: howbeit, for that hee would see the end thereof, would not depart, but did let passe that day, to see whether that any would come aboord him. The nexte day which was Wednesdaye, being the 7th. of August, there came one only Pinnace or Almadia aboord the Generall, in the which were foure boyes, which brought fiue precious stones to sell, and for that they came after such sorte he tooke them to be spies, and that their comming was for no other purpose but to see what they did: and by this meanes hee thought he might vnderstand in what reputation they were with the king. This was the occasion the Captaine generall did receiue them with as good a countenance as he did before, giuing them nothing to vnderstand ỹ he knewe of the imprisonment of Diego Dias, and would not therefore laye hands vpon those, but vpon such as shoulde come afterwarde (which as he thought should be of more credite) vntill such time as he had recouered those that were imprisoned.

Boies sent for spyes

Vnto these also he wrote a Letter by those Boyes, with fained words, saieng that he did vnderstande of their imprisonment: this was done in such order, that if so be this

Digitized by Google

letter ſhould haue come to any other mens handes, they could not haue vnderſtood the ſame. Theſe Boyes did deliuer vnto him this letter, who afterward told the king what great entertainment they had at the Captaine generalls handes, which made him to beleeue that he knewe nothing of the impriſonment of his men, whereof he was very glad: & did retourne and ſend aboord others, and thoſe that ſhoulde goe had warning giuen them not to diſcloſe, that the Factour with the others did remaine priſoners. This was done by pollitie, for that he made this reckoning to deceiue the Captaine generall on this ſort, vntill ſuch time that he were able to ſende a fleete of ſhips vpon him, or til that the ſhips of Mecca, ſhould come and take him. On this ſort went the Malabars aboord, vnto whom the Captaine generall made a good countenaunce, and commaunded them to be entertained very well: all this he did for y he ſaw more ſtrength the ſtaieng. On the Sunday next, there came the principall Malabars, with other fifténe which waited vpon them, in another Pinace. And for that the Captaine generall thought that for thoſe the king would ſend him his Factor and his Scrinenour, he laid handes vpon them all, onely he lefte two Mariners in a pinace, by whom he ſent a letter to the kings Factors, written in the Malabars tongue, in the which he demaunded for the Factor and his Scrinenour, ſhewing he would ſend thoſe which he had ſtaid. The kings factor hauing peruiſed this letter, he enformed y king of y which had paſſed, who cõmaunded the Factor & Scrinenour to be brought home to his houſe as priſoners, that he might from thence ſend for them, and to diſſemble therewith as though he knewe nothing of their impriſonment, ſo cauſe them to be ſent from thence to the Captaine generall, for I ſuche meaning ſende of thoſe Malabars which he had detained, vnto whom great exclamation for the imprizonment of their kinſmen, and therefore the King was the more willinger to ſet our men at libertie, who afterward remained a while in the kings Factors houſe.

The king of Calicuts treſon towards the Captaine generall.

Certaine Malabars ſtayed in exchange

¶ How the Captaine generall ſeeing the delayes were made

for

Digitized by Google

ded that the Factor with the Scriuenor came not, did bring himselfe in a readines as though he would depart immediately, wherevpon without any further delay, the King sent them away, and what els happened. Chap. 23.

The captaine generall seeing ỹ they came not, determined to proue whether ỹ with shewing himselfe as though he wold depart immediatly, they wold the send them to him, did therfore on wednesday, being the xviii. of August commaund to trey his Ankor, & to bring himselfe vnder saile. And for that the winde was contrary he was driuen to come to an Ankor foure leagues from Calicut, riding in an open road, and there they remained till the next Saterday, to see whether they would sende their prisoners. And perceiuing no likelihod thereof, he went yet further into the Sea, so far, that he scarcely could descry any land, & being at an Ankor for lack of winde, there came thether a boat wt certain Malabars, which told ỹ Captaine generall ỹ their comming was to seeke him out, & to tel him ỹ Diego Dias with ỹ others, wer in ỹ kings pallaice, whom he minded to send aboord, which thing to be true, they would bind themselues ỹ as ỹ next day they should be brought. And ỹ cause why they brought ỹe not as then, was for that they thought they shold not ouertake him. Now for ỹ they saue not ỹ Malabars ỹ the Generall kept as prisoners, thought ỹ they were all dead. This craftie dealing was for no other purpose, but to dally with ỹ Captains generall, & to stay him with those words, that the king might in the meane while prepare in Calicut an armie of ships to set vpon him and to tarry for the ships of Meca, to ioyne with his Flæte. After this the Captaine generall commaunded those of the towne, to goe their way and not to retourne without his men, or ells their letters, for if so be they did he would sink them wt his ordinance. And also if immediately they did not returne with an answere, ỹ then he would cut off the heads of those which he had taken. With this aunswere, those of the

Yet made uices to staye the Portingals from departing

Digitized by Google

towne did departe, and immediately as ſoone as they had winde, he made ſayle, and bearing along the Coaſt, came to Ankor at the Bounne ſet over againſt Calycut.

The next daye our men deſcryed comming ſeamen Almadias, which came aboord the Captaine generalls ſhip, in the one whereof came Diego Dias and Aluoro de Braga, and in the others there came many others of the countrey, howbeit, there were none that durſt enter within their ſhips, but did put Diego Dias and Aluoro de Braga in his owne boate which they had at their ſtearne, and afterwarde they themſelues fell further off, tarrieng for the Captaine Generalls aunſwere. To whom Diego Dias ſaid, That as ſoone as the King of Calicut knew that he was gone, he ſent for him from his Factors houſe and ſhewed himſelfe ioyfull, as one that knew nothing of his impriſonment, and aſked him what was the occaſion that the Captaine Generall toke thoſe men which he doth keepe as priſoners, who afterwarde tolde him the cauſe: whereupon the King made aunſwere, that it was well done. He aſked him alſo whether that his Factor had demaunded at his handes any thing of gift, ſpeaking againſt his owne Factor which was there preſent, for that he knew wel inough ỳ it was not long ago, ſince he cõmaunded one other to be killed, for taking certain bribes of Merchaunt ſtraungers. After all this, he willed him to tell the Captaine generall that he ſhould ſend him ỳ ſtone which he promiſed him to be ſet in the Countrey, vpon the which there is a Croſſe and the royall Armes of Portingale, and alſo to know of him whether he be content to leaue Diego Dias for Factor in Calicut, and with the ſame he ſent him a letter for the King of Portingale, which was confirmed and ſigned by the King, and written by Diego Dias and with this Letter, he ſent Aluoro de Braga. The Captaine generall toke this Letter, which was written in a certaine Leafe of a Palme Tree, vpon the which they doo vſe to write matters, that ſhall indure a long time, the effect whereof was this.

Vaſco

Digitized by Google

Vasco de la Gama, a Gentleman of the house came to my Countrie, of whose comming I was very glad. In my Countrie there is great store of Cinamon, Cloues, and Pepper, and precious stones. That which I am desirous to haue out of thy Countrie, is Siluer, Gold, Coral, & Skarlet. The Captaine Generall for that he sawe the king to vse no truth, would not answere for all his offers, but therewith sent him all such as he hadde stayed that were Nayres, and for all the others, he sent him word, he would not send them, vntill such time that he sent him all such merchandise as he had taken of his. Notwithstanding hee sent him the stone he sent for, & with this answere departed those that brought Diego Dyas word. The next day there came a word Bontaybo who tolde the Captaine Generall that he came so sodenly away from Calicut for that the Catuall by the kings commaundement had taken from him all that he euer had, saying that he was a Christian, and that his comming to Calicut ouer land was by the king of Portingales commaundement onely to see his style, & other matters there were which he told him of, and that the same came by the Nayres procurement, the which he knew wel, that as they tooke his goods, so they meant to do him some shrewd turne in his person, if so be that they could haue taken him, and therefore he came his way before. The Captaine Generall was very glad of his comming, and tolde him that hee would carry him to Portingale, and that there he should recouer all his goods with the double, besides other rewards that the king his maister would giue him. He commaunded also that in his ship there should be prepared him a principall good cabine. After this about tenne of the clocke, there came a worde the Captaine Generall three Pinnaces laden with men, and vpon certeine of their seates or benches, there was layd certeine Skarls, as who should say, there came part of theyr Merchaundise. And after these there came other foure one after another. And as touching those three that brought those Skarles, they tolde the Captaine Generall that there came all theyr Merchandise,

The effect of y king of Calicuts letters.

Bontaibo willing to goe to Portingal

Digitized by Google

vse which they would put in his boate, and therefore they willed him to bring thether those Malabars which he had prisoners, and that there they woulde fetche them. The Captaine Generall perceiuing that this was but a fetche, did bidd them to goe their wayes, for that he woulde haue none of their Merchandise but those Malabars to carrye to Portingale, as witnesses of his discouerie.

And if so be that God of his diuine goodnesse doe giue him safe, hee woulde very shortly retourne to Calicut, and then they shoulde well knowe whether that those Christians were theues or no, as the Moores hadde made the king of Calycut beleeue, and therefore that was the cause why he did them soe manifest wrong. This being done, he commaunded to shote of many peeces of Ordinaunce, with the feare thereof they ranne their waye.

And if so be that the kings shippes had bene in a readynesse and a floate, they had sent them against the Captaine Generall, but they were haled by for because of the Winter, which was so bee beleued to haue beene the handye worke of GOD, that our Shippes shoulde bee there at this season, for that they might escape and carrye newes of the discouerye of this Countrye, to restore in the same the holye Catholike faith, otherwise if it had ben Summer he woulde haue hadde his Fleete in a readinesse, the which was spent, and so haue taken vs all, and by this meanes there hadde bene none lefte to haue carryed newes to Portingale.

Of the departure of the Captaine Generall from Calycut towarde Portingale, and what further happened vnto him being in the Iland Anfadina. Cap. 22.

Digitized by Google

Although that the Captaine Generall reioyced very much for that hee had discouered Calicut, yet he was not fully satisfied therwith altogether, for that the King had conceiued against him great displeasure, by this meanes as he iudged the next act that the King his maister should lend, would run in great daunger. Notwithstanding perceiuing that it lay not in his power to do any more, he was therefore contented onely with the discouery, and to haue knowne the Indias, & their naturall con, & what was commodious for the Countrie, and to haue brought with him from thence examples of the spices, drugs, and pretious stones, as also of all other things that were within the same citie. And hauing there no more to doe, he departed, carrieng with him three Malabies which he had taken, for that by them he hopes to haue some agreement made with the King of Calicut at his returne. Leauing there a Factor & Fleet. The Thursday after his departure, being in culme a league of from Calicut, there came towards him to y number of 15. Pangys full of Souldiers, by the which the King of Calicut thought to haue taken them, who hauing their commyng to vnderstanded his ordinance to be shot at them, & that of necessitie, and if he had not done so, they would haue put him in great daunger for that they followed him an hoote and a halfe. And by reason of a storme of raine which raine vpon a sodeine, the Captaine Generall was driuen a sea boord with all his Fleet, in the meane while the Canimes keepe their waye, and bearing his course towards Mylinde in great calmes, euen along the coast, though had a contrarie, although y King of Calicut had sented him sundry waies, that for the necessitie y should that should returne to Calicut, should haue of his friendship and fauour to receiue from thence their lading of Spices, to vse as it were some friendship with them, most that the King would be glad thereof, in especiall being desired, did therefore write vnto him a letter in the Arabian

tongue,

tongue, which was penned in that language by Bontaybo, in the which he did craue pardon for the carrieng awaye of thoſe Malabars with him, which was done for no other intent then that they ſhoulde be as witneſſes of that the which he hay diſcouered, as before he had ſent him woorde. And for that he lefte no Factorie in Calycut (the which he was forced for) was for feare leaſt that the Moores ſhoulde kill him, which was alſo the occaſion that he was not often times a land. Yet for all that he did not leaue, but woulde bee alwayes at his commaundement, ſince that the king his maiſter woulde be gladde of his friendſhippe, and alſo forthwith woulde ſende him in his Fleete greate abundaunce of all ſuch merchaundiſe as he hath demaund for, by the trade, that from hence forth hee ſhoulde haue with the Portingales in his Citie, would redound vnto him great profit. This letter was deliuered vnto one of the Malabars, for carry the ſame a land to the place where it was cõmãded to be deliuered. And afterward he knewe y the ſame was deliuered to y king of Calicut. Then y Captaine generall going forward in his courſe, & that along the coaſt, on the next Thurſday after, he fell amongſt certeine rocks, with all his Fleete, and from one of them that was inhabited there came forth ſundry Pinnaces with men, within the ſame to ſell them fiſh, and other victualls. The Captaine Generall did receiue them very curteouſly, who commaunded to giue them both ſhirts and other things, of the which they were very gladde, whereupon he toke occaſion to aſke them whether they woulde be content that there ſhoulde be erected a marke, with a croſſe in the lande, with the royall armes of Portingale, in token that the Portingals are their friends. And they anſwered that they were contented, and thereby they will knewe that we were chriſtians, and ſo was the marke placed, and ſince that time it is called El Padron de Sancta Maria. Vnto this day by the foreſaid name the rocke is called. From hence as ſoone as the night daeiy on and that the winde began to blow of the ſhoare, the Captaine Generall made ſaile, and keeping al-

boates

Digitized by Google

layes along the shore on the Thursdaie after, being the 19. of September hee fell with a goodly high lande, and harde to the same there laye five little Flandes, and there he came to an Anker, and going a lande to take in water did there finde a young man, which did demaund, concerning the Captaine Generall, whether he were a Moze or a Chriſtian, they answered him that hee was a chriſtian. This he did as it was thought with feare, least that they ſhould have killed him, forſomuch as in that place there were no chriſtians. This young man did carrie our men within a certeine river, & ſhewed them moſt excellent water the which iſſued out betweene certeine rocks, and for his paines they gave him a red night cap. The nert morning following there came from the land foure others in a ſmall boate a boue the Captaine Generall, which brought with them to ſell many gourds and Colecombers, and they were demaunded by the Generall whether there were in that Countrie any Cinamon or Pepper. They answered that there was nothing but Cinamon, and for that he was deſirous to ſee the same, he ſente with them two of his men, the which at their return brought vnto them two greene boughs of certeine trees which they doe take to be the same, reporting that thereof, there was a great grone, howbeit the same was wilde. And at their retourne there came with them more then 20. of that Caunarie men, which brought to ſell hens, gourds, & Colwes milke. Alſo they requeſted the Captaine Generall to ſend with them certeine of his men, for that ſhortly after, they ſhould retourne with greate store of drie Cinamon, Hogges, and Hennes, but for all their great offers, he would let none of his men goe, for that hee feared leaſt the same was some treaſon. The nert daye after before dinner, our men going a lande to cut wode somewhat farre of, from the place where they were, fell on a ſoddeine vppon two Boates, the which laye harde by the ſhoare ſide. Cinamon grovving.

The Captaine Generall woulde not immediatlye procure to knowe what they were, till it was after Dinner,

Digitized by Google

for then he thought to know the same. And being in a rediness to depart, did first commaund one of his Marriners to go vp to the top, to see whether that he could discry any other vessels a sea bord or not, who being there tolde him that he had sight of eight great ships which wer incalmed, with this newes he left his going to se the others, & put himselfe in a readinesse, the winde was in such sort that it might serue them both, & as they came within two leagues of our Fleete, the Captaine Generall made toward them. The enimies perceiuing that, did immediatly flye toward the shoare. And they bearing after this sorte, was broken the Rudder of one of the same, by reason whereof those that were within the ship were forced to go in their boats toward the lande. Nicholas Coello who was next to this ship, went immediatly and layde the same aboord, thinking indeede to finde in it some greate store of riches, howbeit there was nothing els but Cocos and Melasus, which is a certeine kinde of Sugar made of Palmes or Date trees. Also he founde therein manye bowes, arrowes, swoordes, speares and targats, and the other seauen ranne themselues a ground, and for that our men could not come neere vnto them with their ships, they followed them in their boats, and from thence did beate them with their ordinaunce, so that their enimyes were driuen to leaue their shippes, and beeing yet the next day at an Anker, there came vnto him seauen men of the country in an Almadias, who tolde him that those eight ships were of Calicut, the which the king had sent for to take him, as by those that fled away they vnderstood.

How the Captaine Generall went to Anfandina to take in water, & also how he toke there a Moore prisoner, which was seruant to the Lord of the Iland of Goa called Sabayo, the which was taken for a spie. cap. 25.

After

Digitized by Google

After that the Captaine Generall was thus informed, he would tarrie there no longer, but immediatlye came to an Ankor at the Ilande of Anfandina, the which was distaunt from thence as it were two Gunne shotte, where it was tolde him, there was excellent sweete water. This Ilande is but little, and but a league of from the firme land. Where are in the same many woods, and also two verdant hilles, made of fine stone of excellent sweete water, the which are springs and do rise ther, wherof one is fiue fote deepe. Also in the sea about the sayde Ilande is great store of fish. Before that the Moores did vse to traffike to the Indias, the same was inhabited by Gentiles, in the which there were goodly buildings, in especiall their Pagods was a goodly thing. And after that the Moores which came from the red sea began to saile that way, they resorted thether allwayes to take in their water and wood, and did so abuse the inhabitants that they could not wel abide the same, so that they left their dwellings ther, but before their going awey, they plucked downe almost all their Pagods, so that they left nothing standing but the verye Chappell, the lyke they did to all other their buildings, yet for all that those Gentiles that wer of the firme land, which belong to the king of Narsingas, had to this Pagode such deuotion that from thence they would goe sundry times to make in the same their praiers vnto thée black stones that were lieng in the middell of the said Chappell.

Anfādina forsaken of the inhabitants

The Ilande is called Anfandina which in the Malabars languaige is called the fiue Ilandes, for that rounde about the same there lye the other foure. The Captaine Generall hauing come to an Ankor, sent Nicholas Coello with his companye to discouer the same, who founde it according as afore is declared, and a goodlye place of grounde, where they might meine

Digitized by Google

graue their ships. And for that the Captaine Generall had a great course to run, and also for that he knew not when to finde so conuenient a place, he consulted with the other Captaines to bring their shippes there a ground. The first ship that they brought there a grounde was the Shippe the which they called Berrio. And whilest they were thus occupyed, there came many people to sell them victualls. At which time there came fiue small Brickentines that hadde out their Standerds, and Flagges in the toppes of their Maſtes, and within them their Trumpettes and Drummes, whereupon they came playeng at their pleasure. In these Brickentines there came many men, and they all at the Dare, and along the shoare ſhe there were other fiue which came to succour them if they shoulde haue anye neede.

They repaire their ships.

The Captaine Generall after that hee hadde sight of them, had warning giuen him by the Malabars to beware of them, for that they were rouers, and vnder a couloure of peace, did robbe all that they coulde take. And after that hee was entered into his shippe, hee perceiued that hee might haue taken them if so bee that hee would haue consented to lette them to come aboorde him, but hee would not agree to the same. And therefore as soone as they came within Gunne shotte, commaunded all their Ordinaunce to be shot at them from those two shippes that were a floate. They fearing this shotte, gaue out a lowde voice crieng, Tambarane, Tambarane, for so they doe call God, and with this often shooting they fledde their way.

Nicholas Coello being as then in his Boate, went after them alwayes shooting his Ordinaunce, who pursued them so farre that the Captaine Generall was driuen to put vp his Flagge for a signe hee shoulde retourne, and so he did.

The next daye after the Captaine Generall with all his men being a land, working vpon the ship called Berrio, there came in two litle Barcos to the number of twelue men of the Countrie, the which in their apparell seemed to bee of some

Digitized by Google

same countenaunce, who brought for a present a bundell of Sugar Canes, and immediately as soone as they had deliuered the same, they asked license to goe aboord and to see the ships, for that they neuer saw any before. The Captaine generall was greatly offended with this their request, for by that he feared least that they were spies: and whilest they were in this talke, there came thether other two Paraos, with as many more men. Those that came first, seeing that the Captaine generall was somewhat growen in cholar, did will those that came afterward, not to come a lande but to returne againe. The ship Berrio being made in a redinesse, & afterward that the Generalls ship was brought a ground to be new rigged, and hauing a lande about hir, all the other Captaines, there came a man in a little Parao, who seemed to be of the age of foytie yeares, and not of that Countrey, for that he had vpon him a Sabaco of fine Cotten, which reached downe to his heeles, and about his head a tocke or towell, which also couered part of his face, and at his gyrdell a Fawchion or Skeyne. And assone as he leapt a lande, he went immediately to imbrace the Captaine generall as one that had seene him or knowen him before, and after the selfe same sort he vsed the other Captaines, telling them that he was a Christian, and borne in Italy, and that hee was brought into that Countrey of a childe, and that his dwelling was with a Noble man that was a Moze, called Sabayo the which was Lord of a certaine Iland called Goa, lieng about twelue leagues from thence, and had foorty thousand horsemen within the sayd Iland. And for that his habitation was amongst the Mozes, he obserued their lawe, howbeit it was but for an outward shew, but inwardly in his soule he was a Christian: and being in Sabayos house it was tolde him, that there was come by Sea to Calycut certaine men in ships, whereof there was neuer seene the like in the Indias, and that there were none that vnderstode their language, and also that their bodies were couered ouer with cloathes. And when he had vnderstanding of the same, he immediately iudged them to be Frangues, for to

Sugar Canes grovving there.

Digitized by Google

they do call thoſe that are Chriſtians in that Countrey, and for that he was deſirous to ſée them, had therefore aſked lycenſe of Sabayo, ſaieng that if ſo be that he woulde not giue him licenſe to goe and ſée them, that he knewe verye well that he ſhould dye with very thought and anger: by reaſon whereof he gaue him licenſe, by whome hée ſent theim word, that if ſo be that there were in his Countrey anye thing ỳ they had néde of, they ſhuld haue the ſame, in eſpeciall ſhippes and victualles. And moreouer, if they woulde come and dwell in his Countrey, he would be very gladde thereof, and would giue both them and theirs ſufficient lyuing, with the which they ſhould liue very honourably.

After that he had ended thus his talke, the Captaine generall aſked him perticularly for the Countrey of Sabayo, and other things: Whereuppon he requeſted of the Captaine generall a cheéſe for to ſende to a companion of his, which remained in the firme Lande, for that it was agréed betweéne them, that if ſo be that he were well entertained, that he woulde ſende vnto him a token in ſigne thereof. This kinde of dealing made the Captaine generall ſuſpect him, notwithſtanding, he commaunded a cheéſe to be giuen him, and alſo two newe loaues, the which he ſent to his companion as aforeſaide, and he remained alwayes talking with the Captaine Generall: His talke was ſo much, that ſome times hée diſcouered himſelfe to bée a ſpye.

Paulo de la Gama, which noted the ſame, aſked of certaine countrey men what hée was, and they vp and tolde him, that he was a Rouer, and that he had laide aboorde other Shippes, which had bene there brought a grounde before that time. The Captaine Generall béeing thereof informed, commaunded him to be carried aboorde his ſhippe, which was then a grounde, and there he commaunded him to bée well whipped to confeſſe, whether that all or anye parte of the ſame was true that hée had tolde him, and alſo what he meant by his comming thether, and whether he were a Moore or a Chriſtian, who

aun-

Digitized by Google

answered that he was a Christian as he had said before, all the rest he denied, & therefore the Generál sought one other more cruell torment then whipping, which was by hanging of him vp by his members by a pulley, to hoist him vp and downe: and by the great paine which he suffered there, he requested to be let downe, for that as then he would tell him the truth: and being come downe, he declared that hee was a spie, and was sent thether, to discouer how many men the Captaine generall had, and what weapons, for so much as he was ill beloued along all that Coast, because he was a Christian. And that there were many Atalayas or Foysts placed in euery Baye or Kricke to set vpon him: howbeit they durst not vntill such time as there came thether other fortie great Vessells, which were a making in a readinesse for to ioyne with those that are armed, and so to set vpon him, and to take him: and therefore in the meane space he was sent to knowe what he sayd, he affirmed also, that he knewe not certainelye, when those forty sayle woulde come. This much he declared after that he had receiued three or foure torments: all the rest they vnderstood by coniectures, forsomuch as he did not particularlye declare the same.

A notable coũterfait discouered

A kinde of boates so called

The Captaine generall seeing that he would declare no more, was contented with the aduice he had giuen him, and commaunded him to prison vnder the hatches, for to carrie with him vnto Portingale: also to be cured verye well, and to giue him some refreshing of victualles. Afterward he tolde him that he did not minde to keepe him prisoner to haue him as his Captiue, but to carie him vnto the King his Master, to the ende he might tell him some newes of the Indias, knowing verye well that he would rewarde him. Now the Captaine generall hauing knowledge of the comming of his enimies, would therefore tarrie no longer then whilest his ship was new dressing, the which was done in ten dayes.

At this instaunt the Captaine generall was offered for the shippe, the which shippe he had taken of the eight, that did

Digitized by Google

did ſet vpon him a thouſand Fanons, but he wold not take it, ſaieng that he wold not ſell any thing ỹ was his enimies, but commaunded the ſame to be burnt. The Captaine Generalls ſhip being ready and the water being taken in, hee immediately departed vpon the fifth daye of October, and going a Sea ward, about a two hundred leagues from that land, then the Moore which he caried with him as priſoner, ſeeing there was no other remedie, ſaid, that now he would tell him the truth how that indeede he did dwell with the Sabayo, to whom word was brought that the Captain generall went wandring vpon the Seas, as one that knewe not where he was, and therefore there was in preparing a great Fleete for to take him. The Sabayo hauing notice thereof, commaunded him to goe thether to viſite him, and to marke how they went, and alſo to ſée whether that hee could bring them to Goa, which if ſo be that he could bring to paſſe, he would as then laye hand vpon them, for that the ſame went that they were valyaunt, and ſo meant to keepe them to make warres againſt other Kings his next neighbours. Theſe newes the Captaine Generall was glad to heare of, and gaue him from thenceforth better entertainment, & allowed him both apparell and alſo money, & afterward he was made a Chriſtian, to whom he gaue for name Gaſpar, in honour of one of the thrée Kings, called Magus of that name, and for that the Captaine generall was his God father, he gaue him the title of his ſurname, and ſo euer after he was called Gaſpar de la Gamas.

A Moore chriſtened

¶How the Captaine generall went forwarde on his Voyage towarde Mylynde, and of the great troubles he paſt, vntill ſuch time as he came thether. Chap. 26.

Following

Following from hence his course towards Mylynde, whether hee was minded to returne to take in there an Embassadour, he went alwayes in cruell stormes, which the Captaine generall continually indured, vntil such time he had entred the goulfe, & hauing alwayes the winde right against him, it was the occasion that the shippes made but small way, and therefore it was the longer time before he entered the gulfe. But after that he was entered within the same, he was again troubled with great calmes, which on the Sea is very troublesome, not only for the gouerning of their ships, but also with the heat, which is more hurtfull vpon the sea, then vpon the land, for that ther is no couering to defend the Sunne, whereon with the same only men are shifteled vp, as hath bene seene in the voyage toward the Indias. And as I say the winde hauing coursing thus with the heates, the space of many dayes together, did afterward returne and breake vp in contrary windes to go forward, and very good to goe backward. But the Captaine generall being loath to go backward, wold yet rather tarie ther wher he was, as indeed he did. And when he perceiued that the winde was so great and the Seas went so high, that there was no tarrieng for him with his shippes, then was he driuen of force to kepe the Seas, sometime on this bord, and sometime that, so that both he and his men passed great troubles, by reason they all had inough to doe to gouerne their ships. And hoping that after so great stormes there would come faire weather, were driuen once more to pray for those great calmes which they had before. And when they sawe that this weather was like to endure many dayes, and that their water begamne to fayle them, was the occasion that the Captaine Generall commaunded the same to be deliuered by order.

Men shifled vvith the Sunne onely.

Digitized by Google

And going in this neceſſitie, and alſo with fowle weather, the people began to fall ſicke with a diſeaſe in their gums, as they did in the riuer, De buenas Sennales, when as they
The Skurfe. went to Calicut, & alſo their armes and legs did ſwell, beſides other ſwellings which did riſe in their bodyes, by reaſon of a peſtilent ſtinking humour, which did caſt them into a laſke, and of this new infirmitie, there dyed to the number of thirtie perſons. And after that they began once to die, and had continued this kinde of weather vppon the Seas, ther aroſe ſuch a feare amongſt thoſe that did remain aliue, that they fared in the ſame, as it were men amazed, and beléeued verely that they ſhould neuer goe from thence, for that as they thought this kinde of weather was alwayes durable there, and that the ſame was the cauſe that it indured ſo long. The Maſters and Pilots of the Fléete were of the lyke opinion, which made the reſt beléeue it the ſooner, that by this meanes the crye of all thoſe that were there, as well of them that were ſicke as of the other, was great, ſaieng that ſince the weather would not ſerue them to goe from thence, yet they requeſted him not to be an occaſion of their death, but rather conſent to retourne vnto Calycut, or els to ſome other place in the Indias, and beeing ther, to receiue what God ſhuld appoint them, rather then to dye in thoſe ſeas of ſo terrible diſeaſes, for which ther was no like kinde of any remedie, in eſpeciall hauing lacke of all other things, as of victuals and water, which as then they began to want, by reaſon that by their long continuaunce in the ſaid place was all ſpent. The Captaine generall ſeeing the great feare that his men were in, and for to animate them the more, ſayd vnto them all on this ſorte, requeſting them to be content, and not to beléeue that ſuch weather as was there courſed by them on that ſorte, was alwayes lyke to continue, for if ſo bee that it were ſo, then there woulde be no Nauigation from the Goulph to the Straughtes of Meca, nor to Mylynde, nor yet from anye other place, by the which they ſhoulde paſſe: And that it was not impoſſible, but that they might ſomewhat digreſſe from their

Digitized by Google

their right course, and therefore they met with those calmes and windes which they indured: yet those he saide should haue an ende, and with the same, their troubles will lykewise ende.

But for all this, the Marriners wouldе not beleeue him, for that in this trouble they had continued foure moneths, and also that there were dead of theyr fellowes, thirtie persons: so that there were so fewe of them remayning, that there was not to euery ship sixteene persons left to gouerne the same: and of them there were some, that were verye sicke of the disease aboue sayde. By this meanes they fell into such a desperation, by reason that they thought they shoulde goe no further, and as they doe affirme, that Paulo de la Gama, and Nicholas Coello, being both of them Captaines made agreement each of them in theyr Shippes to the other, that if so bee that there woulde come anye Winde, by the which they might retourne into the Indias, that then they woulde surelye doe so.

A vvofull mortalitie

Being thus determined, vppon a Sodayne there came a fresh gale of Winde, with the which the Fleete might goe forwarde, and with the same in sixteene dayes they came within sight of lande, being on a Wednesday the seconde of Februarye: at the which the Marriners reioyced in such sort that by meanes of the same, they had forgotten theyr troubles and daungers that they were past, and gaue vnto God great thankes for all his gracious benefites.

And when that they hadde sight of the Lande, they founde themselues so neere vnto it, that the Captaine generall gaue commaundement to cast about into the Sea, so much as might bee thought sufficient for to staye vntill the morning, the which being come, they went forthwith for to reknowledge the Lande, and for to see where they were, for that as now there was none that knewe the same, although that one of the Moores sayde, that they hadde then taken theyr Course directlye towardes

Digitized by Google

Monſanbique, which ſtandeth betweene certaine Ilandes, ſtanding ouer againſt them, three hundred leagues of the ſhore, whereas the people of the ſame Countrey are continually ſicke of the ſame diſeaſe, that our men were. The morning being come he went to reknowledge the land, and came before a goodly great Citie, which was walled round about and within the ſame, very faire and high houſes, and in the midſt of the ſame there was a great Pallaice, which ſtood very high, and ſeemed to be of a goodly building, all this they ſaw very well out of their ſhips. This Citie is called Magadoxo, which ſtandeth at the ende of the ſaid goulfe in the Coaſt of Aethiopia, a hundred & thirtéene leagues from Mylynde, the ſcituation whereof I ſhall declare hereafter. And for that the Captaine generall knew the ſame to bée a Citie of Moores, when as hée went along the Coaſt, hée commaunded to ſhote of manye peeces of Ordinaunce, and alſo for that he coulde not tell how farre hée was from Mylynde, from thence forward he ſtayed in the night, becauſe he would not paſſe the ſame. Forthwith, on Saturday being the fifth of Februarie, lieng ouer againſt a village of the Moores, which they call Pate, being a hundred and three leagues from Magadoxo, there came from thence eight Terradas which is a certaine kinde of Boates of that Countrey, being all full of Souldiours, and made theyr waye ſtraight towarde our Fléete, from whence we ſhot ſo many peeces of Ordinaunce, that they thought themſelues happy to haue eſcaped by running awaye. Howbeit our men did not followe them for lacke of winde. The next Sundaye following, the Generall arrived at Mylynde, and bée-ing there, the King ſent to viſite the Captaine Generall with ſundrye freſh victualls, ſending him worde alſo, how glad hée was of his comming. The Generall anſwered him againe, by Fernan Martines, by whome hée ſent him a Preſent: and for becauſe of thoſe that were ſicke, whome hée was deſirous to haue cured, hée tarryed there ſixe dayes, in the which time, there died of them many.

The Citie of Magadoxo.

At

Digitized by Google

At this present by the kings license, he caused to be set a land a marke, in token of friendship. And after that he had prouided himselfe of victuals, he departed on a wednesday in the morning, being the xvii. of Februarie, with an Embassadour whome the king did sende, to the king of Portingale, for a perpetuall confirmation of friendshippe betweene them.

Of the death of the Captaine Generalls brother, and of the burning of one of the ships called Saint Raphael, & also how he arriued in Portingale, and of the honour the king gaue him at their meeting. cap. 27.

NOw for that the Captaine Generall had not men inough to gouerne the whole Fleete, he thought good and that by the aduise of the other Captaines, to burne one of those shippes, and that the same should be Saint Raphael, which they determined to doe the rather, forasmuch as the same was al open, and they had not brought him a grounde as they did the others, and also determined to burne the same vppon the shoels of Saint Raphael, vnto which place they came on the Sunday following, where (what for taking in of her furniture, as also for burning the same) he spent fiue daies, and during that time from a village the which is called Tangata, there were brought to sell many hens. This being done the Captaine Generall departed, hauing with him in his shippe his brother called Paulo de la Gama, and on the xx. of Februarie he found himselfe with onely Nicholas Coello in the Iland of Zenziber, which standeth in the altitude of fiue degrees, lieng but ten leagues from the firme land. This Iland is verye greate with the other two that standeth neere vnto it, whereof the one is called Pemba, and the other Mofya, and are verye fertill, and haue in them great store of victualls. Their groues are of Orenge

The Raphaell burned.

The Ile of Zenziber.

Digitized by Google

trées, which bringeth forth goodly Orenges. They are inhabited by Moores, which are but a weake kinde of people, and they haue but small store of weapons, howbeit they goe very well apparelled, in silke and fine cloath made of Cotten, the which they doe buye in Mombassa, of Merchants of Cambayo. The women haue store of iewells of golde from Sofala, and of siluer from the Iland of Saint Larence. They are merchants & their trade is in the firme land, and thether they do carry victuals to sell in litle boats. Each of these Ilands hath a king of himselfe, the which also doe obserue Mahomets lawe as all the rest of the subiectes doe.

As sone as the king of Zenziber heard that the Captaine Generall was there arriued, he sent to visit him and sent him great presents of the fruits of the country, requesting him of his friendship, to the which he agreed. After all this he departed on the first of March, and came to an Ankor before the Ilands of Saint George in Monsanbique, and the next day after he sent a marke to be erected within that Iland, where at his going thether he heard Masse, & without any conuersation with those of Monsanbique he departed. And on the third of March he came to the Iland of Saint Blase, where he stayed to take in his water, and to victuall himselfe of Sea woulfes, and of Solitarius, which they salted to eate whilest they were on the sea, and for the same they gaue God great thanks. After that they were departed from thence (being once before putte back with westerly winds) which blew right against them, God of his goodnes sent them so prosperous a winde, that on the twentith of March, they hadde doubled the Cape of Buena Esperansa with great pleasure, forsomuch as all those that came thether were all in health and verie strong, and as they thought were all in good liking to arriue at Lisshborne.

And finding here a colde Winde which endured well twentye dayes, did set them in a good forwardnesse towarde the Iland of Santiago, which by their Sea cardes

was

Digitized by Google

was by the Pilots wel known not to bée at the vttermoſt a hundred leagues from thence. Some there were that thought themſelues to bée with the ſame, but it was not ſo.

Héere that goodly and fayre winde did faile them, and forſomuch as the Captaine Generall would néedes knowe where that he was, (for that hée coulde not tell) by reaſon there fell certeine ſhowers which came from the landewarde, he commaunded to make as much waye as they coulde poſſible. And going after this ſorte, on Thurſdaye being the xvi. of Aprill, he commaunded the Pilot to let fall his Plommet, who founde that they were in xvi. fathome.

Yet in all that daye, ſailing and kéeping the ſelfe ſame courſe, the leaſt water that they came to, was at xx. fathome, and therefore the Pilottes iudged themſelues to bée vppon the ſhoels Del zio Grande. All the reſt of this voyage perticularlye what aduentures the Captaine Generall did paſſe, vntill ſuch time as he came to the Iſlande of Santiago, I coulde not come to the knowledge thereof, but only how that as they went nére to the ſame, Nicholas Coello to tarry the king newes of this diſcouerie, did on a certeine night a parte himſelfe from the Captaine Generall, and followed his courſe vnto Portingale, where hée arriued at a place called Caſcais on the v. of July, in the yeare of our Lorde God. 1499. who informed the king of all that the Captaine Generall hadde paſt in the diſcouery of the Indias, and of the commodytyes that he had brought with him from thence. Of whoſe diſcouery the king was ſo gladde to heare of, and that they might trade into the Indias by ſea, as when he was proclaimed king of the kingdomes of Portingale. Now after that the Captaine Generall founde miſſing Nicholas Coello hée went forwarde on his courſe towarde the Iſlande of Santiago, for becauſe his Brother was verye ſicke of a Fluſhe, and alſo for that his Shippe made but ſmall waye, for that hée was all open, and therefore hée did

Digitized by Google

did fraight there a Caruell which he found there for to carrye him to Portingale before that he ſhould dye, who left there Iohn de Sala for Captaine of his ſhip as I ſayd before, who as ſone as the ſhip was new rigged, had charge to bring the ſame to Portingale, from the which place the Generall departed, with his brother in the Caruell, whoſe infirmitie did dayly increaſe, in ſuch ſort that the Captaine Generall was driuen to beare with the Iland of the Terceras. And being there arriued, commaunded that his brother might be brought a lande, where he was ſo cruellye handled with his diſeaſe that he dyed thereof, who at his end ſhewed himſelfe to be a good and perfect chriſtian, and a very honeſt Gentleman. After that he was dead and buried, the Captaine Generall departed toward Portingale, who came to Belen in the moneth of September, in the ſelfe ſame yere. 1499. being two yere & two moneths paſt after his departure frō Liſhborne, with 108. men & of them came backe but fiftie aliue, which conſidering they great trauaile and trouble that they had paſt, was verye much. After that the Captaine Generall had giuen God greate thanks for that he had eſcaped ſo many great daungers, he ſent word of his arriuall vnto the king of Portingale, who for the great pleaſure that he receiued of his comming ſent Don Diego de la Silua de Meneſis, Lord of Portugalete, with many other Gentlemen to receiue him as they did, & brought him vnto ẏ court wᵭ an exceeding great number of people, that came thether to ſee ſo new & rare a matter, as that was of ẏ Captaine General, not onely for that he had done, but alſo for that they toke him for dead: being come to the kings preſence, his highneſſe gaue him ſo great an honour as ſuch a one deſerued, who by the diſcouerie of the Indias, did giue ſo great a glorie vnto the eternall God, and honour and profit to the crowne and kingdome of Portingale, and a perpetuall fame to all the world. Afterward he made him knight, & to him and to his heires for euer he gaue for armes the royal armes of Portingal, & alſo to ſet at the foote of the Eſcutchin two Does the which they call Gamas.

Digitized by Google

Gamas. Also he gaue him towarde this his liuing three hundred thousand Reis a yeare, the which may be worth of our money 200. pound a yeare, and this to be paied out of the tithes of the fish in the village of Sines. Moreouer hee promised him to make him Lord of the said village, so much as he was borne there. And vntill such time that he could giue him ỹ same, he allowed him a thousand crowns a yeare, the which he did well performe, from that time forwarde, and after that he had receiued the possession thereof, he did passe it ouer vnto the house appointed, for the contraction of the Indias. Moreouer he graunted him that after the trade of the Indias was settled or established, that then he might lade for his own account to the sum of. 200. Duckats in spices, & that without paieng for the same any custome at all. Also he gaue him other possessions & rents and a bill of remembraunce to make him Lorde. As for Nicholas Coello, he made him a Gentleman of his house, and gaue him possessions, and did allowe him some recompence towarde his charges. The king himselfe with this new discouerie did increase his titles with a newe and a famous stile, of Lorde of the conquest and nauigation of Aethiopia, Arabia, Persia, and of the Indias.

How the king of Portingale did nominate A pedro al Verez Cabral for Captaine Generall of a Fleete towarde Calicut, for to settle there a factorie, and of his departure from Lisshborne. Chap. 28.

BEeing certainlye knowne to the king of Portingale, that from his kingdome there is a nauigation to the Indias, and also of the innumerable riches, & that ther are in those parts among the Gentiles, sundrye Christians, did therfore determine to prosecute and followe the discoueryes of the same, giuing all praise and laude vnto the eternall God, for his great bene-

The preparation vnto ỹ seeond voiage.

Digitized by Google

kis that he hath bestowed vpon him, to let him be the first that hath discouered this new worlde, the which hath alwayes beene so close vpon the Sea, that there hath beene none in all Europe that durst aduenture that waye. But hee not remembring the trouble of his spirite, neyther yet the spending of his treasure, nor the daunger of his subiects, woulde nenetheleſſe take this moſt famous enterpriſe in hande, for that there might bee in the Indias publyſhed the Euangelicall lawe, to the ende that thoſe kinde of loſt people, might receiue the same, as also for the increasing, not onelye of his owne treasure, but generallye the benefite of all his subiects.

And that the same might take the better effect, hee determined to giue the attempt (if it were possible) to settle a Factorye in Calycut by gentleneſſe, for as hee once vnderſtode that the dwellers in the same were inclined to trade, he thought that after this sort there wold growe betweene them and vs conuersation, and so a friendshippe, the which might bee an occasion that they woulde incline themselues to heare the worde of God preached. And beeing thus fullye determined, hee commaunded to bee in a readineſſe against the nert yeare following, a Fleete of ten shippes and two Carueils, which shoulde goe well laden with all such thinges as Vaſco de la Gama shoulde informe him to bee spent in Calycut. Also there went others towarde Sofala and Quyloa, where also hee commaunded certeine Factorye to bee setteled, not onelye for the golde which they haue there, but also that theyr shippes might alwayes touch there. And concerning such as shoulde bee appointed for Calycut, he named for Captaine Generall of this Fleet, a Gentleman called Pedro Aluares Cabral, who came of an honourable house of the Cabralls, and for his petie Captaine, a Gentleman called Sancho de Toar. The names of the other Captaines as manye as I knewe were these, Nicholas Coello, Don Luis continuo, Simon de Myseranda, Simon Leyton, Bartholome Dyas, who discouered the Cape Buena Esperanſa, Dyego Dyas, his

The names of the Generalls Captaines, & Factors.

Digitized by Google

his brother, ỹ which went before for purser with Vasco de la Gama. Those that wer Captaines of ỹ Carrels were one Pedro de Taide, and Vasco de la Siluera, and for Factor of the whole Fleete, was one Aries Correa, who likewise should remaine for Factor in Calycut, and for his clarkes there were appointed one named Gonsalo Gyl Barbasa, & Pedro Vas Caninon. Of this Fleete there shoulde remaine and trade with the Merchants and Merchaundise in Sofala two ships, and with the same shoulde continue for Factor one called Loriso Hurdato. In this Fleet ther went. 1500. men. The Articles which the Capcaine Generall carryed in his instructions, besides those of the setling of the Factory was, ỹ if so be ỹ the king of Calycut would not quietly consēt, or giue sufficient lading, for those ships which he carried nor consent to haue the factorie setled there: That then he should make him most cruell war, for the iniury which he shewed vnto Vasco de la Gama. And if so bee that the Factorie might be quietly setteled, then he should requeste the king in secret that he doe not consent in Calycut, or in anye other of his harbours belonging to his kingdome, any of the Mores of Meca to remaine ther, forsomuch as hee would send him from hence forth all such Merchaundise as they doe bring, and that farre better cheap then they doe sell the same. Moreouer, that in their waye they doe touch at Milinde to set ther a land the Embassador, which Vasco de la Gama brought from thence, and to sende the king a present. Also the king did send with the Fleete fiue Friers of the order of Saint Faunces, of whome went for Vicar, a Frier called Frai Henrique, the which was afterward Bishop of Sieba, and he to remaine in the Factorie, to preach the Catholike faith vnto the Malabars. Friers sent to the Malabars.

The Fleet being dispatched, the king in person on Sunday being the viii. of March went to heare Masse at the Monasterie of Belem, going thether in Procession, hauing the Captaine Generall, the which heard Masse with him, within the curten, for on that sort, he ment to giue honour to such as did serue him in such daungerous affaines as this was.

Digitized by Google

The Maſſe was ſaid after the Portingale order, and at the ſame there was a Sermon made by Don Diego Ortis, who was then Biſhoppe of Vyſeu, who gaue great praiſe vnto the Captaine Generall for accepting the ſaide voiage at the kings hands, ſince that therby he did not onely ſerue the king, who is his tẽporall Lord, but alſo the eternall God, who is ſpirituall. And alſo that euery one might wel know that none of all the nobles, the which are ſo highlye commended as well in the Grecian hiſtories as in the Latine and barbarous, was equall vnto the Captaine Generall in taking vpon him this voyage. And further he gaue him other greate prayſes for the which hée was enuyed at, the Maſſe béeing ended, there was a Banner which had the royall armes of Portingale, vpon the ſame deliuered vnto the Biſhoppe, who after that hée had bleſſed the ſame, the king with his owne hand did deliuer it vnto the Captaine Generall, for to beſtowe it in his maine toppe. And after that hée had receiued the ſame, he toke at the Biſhops hands a bonnet or night cap the which the Pope had bleſt, and ſent for a great iewell, and with his owne hands did put the ſame on the Captaine Generalls head, ſayeng that he did preſent vnto him a iewell the which he did much eſteeme. And afterward that the Biſhop had giuen him his bleſſing, the king with the ſame did accompanie him to the water ſide, where the Captaine generall with al the Captaines of the fleete toke their leaue of the king, and did kiſſe his hands, and the king gaue them Gods bleſſing & his, with the which they went all a borde, from whence they ſhot off all the ordinance that was in the Fleete, the which made a wonderfull noiſe. The king béeing returned to Liſhborne, for that the Fleete could not that daye depart, by reaſon of the weather. The next daye which was the ninth of March, in the yeare of our Lorde. 1500, hauing a ſufficient good gale of winde, with the which the Fleete might goe out of the Riuer. The Captaine Generall did then make a ſigne that the reſt of the Fleete ſhoulde weye their Ankors, the which immediatlye they

A iewell of great price.

did

Digitized by Google

did begin with great diligence and triumph that the Mariners made. And when it was eight of the clocke in ỹ morning the whole Fleete hauing wayed, did then begin to cut and spread their sayles with a great pleasure, and crie saieng altogether, Buen viage, that is to say, A luckie and prospe-rous voyage. After all this they beganne all to be ioyfull, euerye man to vse his seuerall office, the Gunner in the midst of the ship, haling the maine shootes, with the Capteine. The Mariners and ship boyes, some in the forecastell haling bollings, braces, and Martnets: other belying the shootes both great and small, and also seruing in trimming the sayles, and others the nettings and foretop sayles, other some vering the trusses and also beleying braces and toppe sayle shootes, and coyling euery sort of ropes. It was wonderfull to see such a number of diuersities of offices, in so small a rome, as is the breadth and length of a ship. All the Fleete being vnder sayle, departed that daye without anye stay by a quarter winde, and beeing with the same vnder sayle, on the xiiij. of March, they came within the sight of the Canarias, and on the xvij. of the same moneth, they past by the Iland called Santiago, and on the xviiij. of the same moneth, they lost the company of one of their ships, of the which went for Captaine one Vasco de Tayde, who was Captaine of the Fleete also, although he neuer declared the same, the which neuer after was seene.

¶ How the Captaine generall came vnto Brasill, and afterward how there was lost foure ships of the Fleete. Chap. 29.

This ship being thus gone, the Captaine generall tarried for the same two dayes, and on the xviiij. of Aprill they did descry land, of the which they were verye glad, not only for that they had discouered the same, but because that the Pilots supposed the

Digitized by Google

A new land diſcouered.

ſame to be ſoure other land, that Vaſco de la Gama had not diſcouered, for that it ſtode to the Eaſt, and immediatly the Captaine Generall commaunded his Maſter to goe in his ſmall boate and to ſee what kinde of people were thoſe that dwelt in the ſayd Countrey, who returned with an aunſwere, ſaieng, that the ſame lande was a goodly fayre and fertill Countrey, in the which there were great ſtore of Apples, and that there walked many men along the water ſide: with this newes, the Captaine generall came to an Anker, & ſent once more his Maſter with great dilygence to enforme himſelfe of the Countrey and of their dwellings, and found that the people were of colour ſomewhat blacke, and men well proportioned, howbeit they went all naked, hauing both bowes and arrowes. But when night was come, there fell ſo great a ſtorme that the Captaine generall with all the reſt of the Fleete, were faine to wey theyr Ankers, and runne along the Coaſt, vntill ſuch time as they found a good Port, in the which they came to an Anker, vnto the which the Captaine generall did giue for name, Puerto ſeguro, forſomuch as the ſame ſerued for all wethers. Heere our men toke two men of that Countrey, the which went in an Almaldia, who were brought before the Captaine generall, that he might informe himſelfe what Countrey that was, which could not be known notwithſtanding, forſomuch as there was none in all the fleete that could vnderſtand them, by any tokens or ſignes. The Captaine generall ſeeing ỹ ther was no meanes for to informe himſelfe by thẽ, cõmanding to giue them apparell, ỹ the others might be deſirous to bring the victuals to ſel, wt other things which they had in their country, & with this they went their way, wt great ioy of ỹ Captain generals gift. And when they wer come a land amongſt their cõpanions, & they perceiued their good entertainment, did aduenture to come to conferre with our men. The Captain generall finding himſelf indifferently in this country, did determine to take in freſh water to refreſt his men wall, for ỹ he knew not when he ſhuld chance wt like opportunitie. And for ỹ God might ỹ rather aid thẽ, he

Digitized by Google

he commanded on ỹ next day, which was on Easter weeke, a Masse shuld be said a land, ỹ which was so done wᵗ great solemnitie & that vnder a pauillion, in which ther was made a Sermon by Fraij Henrique, Doctor of Diuinitie. And whilest ỹ diuine seruice was a celebrating, there assembled many of ỹ country people together, which shewed thẽselues to be very merry wᵗ plaieng & leaping which they made, besides their sounding vpon cornets, horns, & other instrumẽts. After Masse was ended, & that ỹ Captaine generall was going a ship bord, these people went wᵗ him vntil he toke his boat, singing & making a Ciuall and manner of pastimes: this day after dinner, ỹ Captain general gaue our men licẽse to go a land to buy & sell wᵗ them, which they did, & in truck of paper & cloth they gaue them parrats, & other sundry sort of birds, which were all very faire, wherof they haue great abundance, with the which they make fethered hats & night caps, which are very gallant. Some of our men ỹ went to see their townes do declare ỹ the same is a goodly country & fertill of woods, wᵗ great store of goodly waters, & plentie of fruits, & that ther is gathered in ỹ same gret quantitie of cotten. And for ỹ this country is ỹ which we cal Brasil, which to all men is common, I will not speake of ỹ same further; but only ỹ in diuᵉ daies that ỹ Captaine generall staid ther; was seene a fish which ỹ sea did cast a land, ỹ was greater then any Tonel, & of ỹ bredth of two of thẽ, howbeit he was round: ỹ head & eyes were much like vnto a hogs, his eares like vnto an Elephants, he had no teeth, but vnder his belly he had two issues, his taile was three quarters of a yard in bredth, & as much in length, his skinne, was lyke vnto a Hogges skinne, which was a finger thicke. In this Iland the Captaine generall commaunded to be erected a high Crosse of stone, and therfore he gaue the same to name La tierra de Santa Crus. From hence he sent a Caruell which he brought forth with him for the same purpose, with letters vnto the king his Lorde, of all that which had chaunced him vnto this place, and how that he had left there two bannished men of those twentie, the which he

Ornamẽts made of Parrats feathers.

The coũtrey of Brasil discouered

Digitized by Google

he carried with him, to the ende they might better enforme themſelues what Countrey that ſame was, and whether it were a firme lande, as it did appeare vnto them all, by the great diſtance of the Coaſt that they had found, and becauſe of the great voyage which he had taken in hande to make, he could not ſend to know perfectly. With this Caruel he ſent a man of that Countrey for a ſhew, by what kinde of people the ſame was inhabited. This Caruell being departed, the next day after being the ſecond day of May, the Captain generall departed with all his Fleete, bearing his courſe toward the Cape Buena eſperanſa, the which was from thence almoſt 1200. leagues, which is a great and fearfull gulph to paſſe, by reaſon of the great windes which doe courſe in thoſe partes, moſt of the time. And being vnder ſayle in the ſame, on the xii. of May there appeared in the Element a great Comet with hir beames, the which came out of the Orient, and for the ſpace of x. dayes did alwayes appeare as well in the night as in the daye, alwayes inlarging his beames. On Saterday being the xviii. of May, there came amongſt all the Fleete ſuch a ſtorme from the South-eaſt, that all the Fleete was faine to take in their ſayles, hauing the Seas very high mingled with prety ſhowers of raine. And for that the ſame ſtorme was afterwarde ſomewhat abated, they brought themſelues vnder their forſailes againe, and at night the winde being altogether calme, ſuch ſhips as wer left behind, did ſpred out alſo their ſprit ſaile, to ouertake thoſe y went before. And going by a quarter winde, & following their courſe by the South, the ſunday being the xviii. of May, the winde beganne to increaſe, which was the occaſion that the Captaine generall commanded their ſailes to be taken in, and to ſarde vp their ſprits ſailes, the which being done, the like did all the other Captaines, and going on this ſort on Sunday, betweene x. and xi. of the clocke of the day, did begin to arme in the Northweſt a ſpoute, with the which the winde calmed in ſuch ſorte, that the ſailes did beate againſt the Maſt, and the Pilots being (not as yet acquainted with the ſecret ſignification of a ſpoute) for that they

A Comet ſeene in the element

they had not trauayled those Seas, thought the same to be a signe of faire weather, and of great calmes: by reason whereof, they neuer made any kinde of alteration in any a thing appertaining to their sayles. Vpon this on a Sunday, there came such a winde and so furious, that then they had no time to amayne and take in their sayles, by reason whereof, there were foure Shippes sunke without escaping one person of them all, and of one of these was Captayne one Bartholomew Dias. The other seauen remayned halfe full of water, which they had taken in, which lykewise had sunke, if so be that parte of their sayles had not bene torne. four ships sunke by tempest.

And after that the winde veered to the Southwest they bare with the same, the which was so great that they were driuen to roue all that daye and the nert night following without sailes, so that the one could not see the other, howsoeuer as yet the returne of any other winde was not come, they were driuen to such daunger that they thought thereby they should lose their liues, forsomuch as the rest of the Fleete was so cast away before their eyes, wherewith they were stroken into a very great pensiuenesse. The nert day the winde being somewhat incalmed, with the same the Fleete did ioyne themselues together againe, and immediatly after, the winde came to the East and Northeast, which was so great that it made the Seas to goe higher then euer they did before, and so the same endured the space of 11. dayes: and all this time the shippes laye a hull, although they proued fiue times to hoyse vp their sayles, as aforesaid. Now the Seas lyght so high to all their iudgements, they thought it impossible for the shippes to escape: for ouer and besides that, by the working of them it was thought, that sometime they did hoyse vp their shippes aboue the Element, and other times when the shippes began to descend, they fell as it were downe a monstrous hill, that they feared they should be all swallowed vp in the Intralles of the Earth. A vvõderful storme and great Seas.

In the daye the water was of the colour of pitch, and

in the night of me. The meeting with the other furniture of the ſhippes, with the great force of the winde, made ſuch a terrible noyſe, and was ſo fearefull to heare, that the ſame is impoſſible to be declared, but by thoſe onelye that endured and paſſed the ſame, with the force of this, the Fleete was ſeparated into ſundry places. The Captaine Generall was up with Symon de Myranda, and Pedro de Tayde, whether the winde would carry them: all the others went at Gods mercie.

Of the meeting of the King of Quiloa & the Captaine generall, at which time there was ſet downe a Trade and Factorie, and how the King reuolted himſelfe of the ſame afterward. Cap. 20.

After that the Captaine Generall had paſt with parte of his Fleete, theſe great Hoznes diode finde himſelfe to haue doubled the Cape, without anye ſight of the ſame, having in his company no more then two Shippes, which haue alwayes vp with him. And the Lorde having bled alwaies towardes them his wonderfull great mercie, he came within ſight of the lande the fifteenth day of July, towarde the which he commaunded to beare, howbeit the Pilots did not knowe the ſame, notwithſtanding they found that it ſtode in the altitude of xx. degrées, they were ſo neere vnto lande, that the Shippes laye with their beake heads cloſe to the ſame. But the Captaine generall would not conſent that anye of his men ſhoulde goe a lande: yet from their ſhippes they might eaſilye perceiue, that the ſame was well inhabited, for

so the great number of people they did see there, and yet of all those there came none to the water side, to see what we were.

After that he saw that there was no hope to have any refreshing from thence, he did afterwards procure the same from the Sea, where there was great plentie of fish, where our men was drawen to fish for it. Afterwards the Captaine generall commaunded to weye their Ankors, and to followe his course, so neere unto the shore, that he might well see great numbers and store of sundrye beastes, which fed along the River, that entred into the Sea, and also they saw many people.

They cõe to Sofala

Now going on that sort, the Captaine generall did passe unto Sofala, with the which as yet the Pilot was not acquainted, and being neere to the same, he saw two Iles and right over against one of them there was ridding at an Ankor two Shippes, which as soone as they had discovered our fleete, did begynne to sayle away towarde the shore. And for that the Captaine generall saw that they fledde, he commaunded to followe them, which was done in such sort that our men did overtake them, and take some of them prisoners, for that they did not defende themselves, and concerning the chiefe Person that was in these Shippes, the Captaine Generall was advertised that he was the King of Mylyndes neere kinsman, and was going from Sofala laden with Golde to Mylyndes. Who confessed, that when they had descryed our Shippes, they received such a feare, as though they should be taken, and that therefore they did throwe the most part of their Golde into the Sea, and they themselves came a lande.

After that all this was done, the Captaine generall told him that he was very sorye for their so great mischance & losse, in especially for so much as the King of Mylyndo was in so great a credite with the King of Portingale his Master, which is the occasion that all Portingales are and shall bee allwayes at his commaundement. And having shewed

unto

vnto him great courtesie, he commaunded the shippes to be returned with all the golde they hadde founde in the same.

The Moore asked of him whether he had brought with him any Witches, that they might with woords of inchantment fetch vp such golde as was throwen into the Sea. To whom the Captaine generall made auns were, that the Christians doe beleeue in the true God, who hath and doth defende them so, that they doe not vse nor beleeue in witchcraft, and therefore they do not vse the same. Of this Moore the Captaine generall was aduertised, that he hadde somewhat ouer runne Sofala, and for that he would not returne backe, he did at this time leaue it, and hauing dispatched the Moore, followed his course, and on the 11. of July arriued at Monsanbique, where he toke in his water, and a Pilot to carry him to the Iland of Quiloa, toward the which he directed his course, running along the Coast. In this his voyage he saw sundry profitable Ilands which were belonging to the king of Quiloa, which as I haue declared is a great Prince, and is Lord from the Cape De las correntes, almost vnto Mombassa, which is welneere foure hundred leagues of Coast, in the which there doe enter the two Ilands that I haue spoken of before, ouer and besides Sofala, and other sundry Townes vnto Monsanbique, and from thence as many more vnto Mombassa, with an infinit number of Ilandes, that doth yeld him great rents. Notwithstanding as touching his estate it is but small, for he is not able to make many men of warre: his abode is alwayes in Quiloa, in a certaine Iland, which is a hundred leagues beyonde Monsanbique in the Coast of Aethiopia, neere to the firme lande, the which is verye fertill of Orchardes, and Woodes, that beare sundry sorts of fruites, there are excellent good waters, and also they do reape great store of Millo, and other seedes which they doe sow, and there is bred vp in the same great store of small Cattell. In those Seas there is great plentie of Fish, and that verye good. So that what with the victualls that they haue in the lande,

The king of Quiloa a mightie Prince.

and

Digitized by Google

and what there commeth from other places of the firme land, the Citie is plentifully prouided, which citie is compaſſed about with faire gardens on the one ſide, & with the ſea on the other, which cauſeth the ſame to ſhew very pleaſant, it ſtandeth in 19. degrees to the South, & is alſo greate and full of people. Their houſes are made of lime & ſtone, in the which there are goodly chambers. Their king is a Moore, and ſo are the inhabitants, the naturall people of the Countrie are a kinde of blacke people, and thoſe that are ſtrangers are white, their common language is Algarauia. They doe apparell themſelues very richly, in eſpeciall the women, for they carry alwaies vpon them great ſtore of iewels of gold. They are great Marchants, for their trade is of the gold that commeth from Sofala, and from this citie it is diſpearſed to all the Countrie of Arabia Felix, & other places, and therfore there reſort thether many merchaunts frō other places. Ther are alwaies in this port many ſhips which lye at anker a groūd when they haue no neede of thē. Theſe ſhips haue no nailes, but are ſowed together with ropes made of Cairo, & pitched ouer with wildeitemile, for becauſe as in all y countrie there is no other kind of pitch. The winter in this countrie doth begin in Aprill, & maketh an end in September. The Captaine Generall being come to the harbour of this Citie, and hauing obteined of the king a ſafe conduct that he might ſend him a meſſenger, did ſend vnto him Alonſo Hurtado, who went accompanied with ſeauen of the principals of their ſhips, and that they might ſhew themſelues in more countenaunce & authoritie, they went in their beſt apparell. Being come before the king, he repreſented vnto him the meſſage which the Captaine Generall gaue him, which was to ſignifie vnto him, he was come thether with y king of Portingale his maiſters fleete, to ſettle a trade in y citie, & ſo the ſame ſhip had brought with him great ſtore of merchandiſe y were conuenient to be ſpent in y countrie, & therfore he was deſirous to talk with him therin, howbeit y king his maiſter did countermand him y in any wiſe he ſhould not leap a-

The deſcriptiō of the city of Quyloa.

Shippes vvithout nailes.

Digitized by Google

The kings meſſage to ỳ Captaine Generall.

And as ſoone as it was day the king ſent by two principall Moores word vnto the Captaine Generall, that he was very glad of his comming, and alſo to knowe whether he had neede of anye thing in his countrie which he might commaund as his owne, and make as much account thereof, whyle he was there, as if he were in Portingalle, conſidering the greate good will which hee doth owe vnto the king of Portingale, and that in all his affaires he ſhould make as much reckoning as of his owne home. The Captaine Generall hauing well vnderſtood the kings meſſage, vpon the ſame determined to ſend him the kings letter, which he had brought, and alſo the preſent, which was all the furniture of a Jennet horſe, which was alſo both riche & gallant. And hauing taken his counſel vpon ỳ ſame, it was agreed vpon to ſend it, and that Aries Correa ſhould haue the cariage thereof, forſomuch as hee was the factor of the whole fleete, and alſo for that hee went for Factor to the king of Calicut, and that he ſhould ſo goe accompanyed with the principalls of the fleet, beſides the trumpetors, that ſhould goe alwaies ſounding before him, which was ſo done. The king being informed of ỳ coming of Aries Correa, ſent of the nobles of his Court to receiue him, which might the more eaſily bee done, for that the kings pallaice was hard by the water ſide, and going altogether, there were certeine women which by the kings commaundement were tarryeng for their comming, with perfuming pans in their hands, out of the which there came ſo excellent a perfume, that it did replenish the whole earth therewith. And paſſing after this ſorte by theſe women, hee came to the kings pallaice, who was ſitting in his chaire of eſtate, and accompanyed with many noble men & Gentlemen, who alſo receiued Aries Correa with great honour and pleaſure, and alſo the preſent. Afterward he gaue him the letter which was written on both ſides, on the one ſide was ỳ Portingale, ỳ other in the Arabian tongue, which the king commaunded forthwith to be read, which both he and all the nobilitie were very gladde to heare. And all they together with a lowde

voice

voice gaue God and Mahomet great thankes that they had permitted them to haue friendship with so great a Prince as the king of Portingale. And also being very well pleased with the furniture of the Ieunt, he requested Aluis Correa to stay with him, while the Fleete did there remaine, which with the Captaine Generalls licence he did, during the fiue daies that he was with him, almost he spent his time in no other thing, but to knowe the vse & custome of the king of Portingale, & of the order of his gouernment, & also particularly as though y he did remember no other matter all y time, & being desirous to see the Captain generall, did procure with as much diligence as he could to haue him a land, & to bring him to his pallaice, notwithstanding he made his excuse saieng, y the king had commanded him not to come a land in any port, with this answere y king with diuers to encounter with him vpon the water, who would needs go as far as he could on horsback, with y furniture of a Iewel of the king of Portingale had sent him, & for y in his country he had done y reuerence y order therof, he requested one of our men to do it vnto him. And when the king had all things in a readines, there were carried for him certein of y principals, any fat of a Ware, & amongst them ther was brought a liue sheep, which whilest y king was coming vpon him, they did open as he was aliue, & after y they had taken out his guts & all vncleanes, they did y same vnto y poore beast. The king being now on horsback he vsed also with his hande vpon y sheep, which in a kinde of ceremony y the witches they do vse. After y he had thus troden vpon the sheep, he went forward & hunted vp, & by all his company after him a fast, saieng as a loude voice certein words of witchcraft. And after this sort he met with the Captaine Generall vpon y water, where he deliuered him a priest to carrie him to Calecut. There there were left with the king, two of those Mauretanes that they might enforme themselues of the countrie, as farre as in their strength, one of those was called after Alexandre Machado, who after that he had gotten the Arabian language, went by lande

Paganish superstition

Digitized by Google

into the straights, and from thence vnto the kingdome of Cambaya, from whence he departed to Baligate, and so there settle himselfe, with the Sabayo, that was Lord of Goa, seeing that he was a Moore, and for the same, he was taken in all that Countrie this his trauell with very pleasable to Alonso de Albuquerque, as you shall perceiue hereafter.

How the Captaine Generall arriued at Calycut, and how the king sent to visit him a boord his ship, and also how afterward he came a land for to see him, and of other things there.

The Captaine Generall being returned to his ships departed toward Calycut, being the 8. day of August, & on the 28. the same [illegible] to Anchor in Calycut, after he had certaine dayes [illegible] for the coming of the ships of Mecca, with intent to set vpon them if so be they came thether. And while they were there, they did confesse themselues, and afterward did receiue the Sacrament, And they seeing that there came no ships, departed toward Calycut, and on the 13. of September he came to an anker within a league of the same. And immediately there came certaine Almadias aboord our fleete, to sell victuals, & also there came certain Noyres of the most principall belonging to the king of Calicut, with a certaine Guzarate merchant, by whom being sent for vnto the Captaine Generall, they could not haue any answere at their owne will then to vnderstand of him whether he was come in peace, & that he could not be in any better place to command him, if there were any thing in his citie he had need of, he would accomplish it same with great good will. Whereunto the Captaine generall made answere with great thanks, & seeing in what good will the king sent to visit him, he thought himselfe to anker more vnto the vttermost shooting of his ordinance, with the which he did salute the, which was to great a won-

The king of Calycuts message to the Captaine Generall.

der

ner to the dwellers, that those that were Moores said, that against us there were no resistance. The next daye following by the consent of the Captaines of the Fleete, the Captaine Generall sent by one whose name was Diego Dias to demaund a safe conduct of the king to send a messenger vnto him, sending also with the saide Dias three Malabars that Don Vasco de Gama had taken from Calicut. Whose sent all apparelled in a gallant sorte, after the Portingales order, whom all the citie came forth to see, being meruailed to behold them to returne so well, which was the cause that they were so well pleased with our men, that they were had in so great reputation and so famous as they were, but seldome that king would not see the although he was glad to vnderstand after what sorte they returned, commaunded y the said Dias should be brought before him, whome he receyued very louingly. And after that he knewe whereto he came, answered by all the noblemen of our men, would come a shore, might do without any feare at all. This answere being receyued of Captaine Generalls eares, he sent presently vnto the king Alonso Hurtado, to signifie vnto him y the said Diego belonged to the king of Portingale, of the which he went for Captaine Generall, and that his comming thether was for no other purpose, but onely to settle a true and perfect friendship, for the which it was conuenient for him, to take with him, howbeit he sayde, the king his maister hadde commaunded him, that he shoulde not doe it, without he might for the assurance of his person, receiue some pledges to remaine in the shippes whilest he was a shore with the king, and that the one of those pledges shoulde be the Catuall of Calicut, and Aracamancca y the which is one of the principallest Nayres. And another there went with Alonso Hurtado, one that coulde speake the language, which shoulde declare vnto the king the effect of the message. The king of Calicut maketh excuses vvhen he should deliuer pledges

The king being hereof informed marueiled much to heare that the Captaine generall did demaund those pledges,

Digitized by Google

which he did excuſe to giue, for ſuch as they were lickly & olde, howbeit he ſaid he would giue others that coulde better abide the brauenelle of the ſea. But afterwards he did inſiſt very much, not to giue any pleadges at all, for ſo much as thoſe that were preſent there perſe for ſorie to leaue men in Calyncut, and gaue the king counſell to ſende none, for that in giuing of any he might well iudge therin y the Captaine Generall had but little confidence in him, and by this meanes he ſhould remaine dishonoured. Yet for all this Alonſo Hurtado did ſtill inſiſt in his demaunde, in ſuch ſorte that they ſpente the moſte parte of the daie. At the end the king hauing a deſire to haue a trade kepte with ours, for the benefit that might redounde vnto him by the ſame, did conſent to Alonſo Hurtados requeſt, in giuing the pleadges that were demaunded; which being come to the Captaine Generalles knowledge, he began to make himſelfe in a readineſſe to goe and ſpeake with the king, and to remaine a land three or foure daies, appointing in his place Sancho de Toar, to whom he gaue commaundement that there ſhould be made for thoſe pleadges at their comming aboord good entertainment, and to looke well vnto them, and not to deliuer them to any that ſhould come to demaunde them, although they came in his name.

On the xviii. daye of December the Captaine Generall put himſelfe in his beſt apparell, and carryed with him thirtie of the principall men of his Fleete, which ſhould remaine with him a lande, with others that were the kings ſeruauntes, which ſhoulde attende vppon him, as vppon the kinges owne perſon. He commaunded alſo to be carryed with him all the furniture for his Chamber and kitchin, with his Cupboarde of Plate, in the which there were many rich peces of ſiluer gilted.

Now being with all theſe thinges in a readineſſe to departe, there came from the Citie fiue and twentie principall Nayres, which were commaunded by the king to attende vppon the Captaine Generall, accompanyed with manye men, beſides others that came ſounding vppon Trumpets,

Digitized by Google

pots, other vppon Sackbuts and other instrumentes.
The Captaine generall being informed that the King was tarrieng for him in a certaine Galerie, which onelye for to receiue him in, he had commaunded to be made harde by the water side, twke his boate and went toward the shore, being accompanied with all the other boats of ỳ Fleete, which went all in good order, and set out with manye flagges and trumpets, which being ioyned together as wel these as those that came from the Citie, made a wonderfull noyse. With this came those pledges aboord the Generalls ship, into the which they were loath to enter, vntill such time that ỳ Captaine generall did disimbarke himselfe a lande, giuing thereby to vnderstand that they wer afeard that they being once aboord, he would returne againe into the Fleete, and so take them for captiues. They did stand so much vpon the same, that Aries Correa was faine to tell them, that without any suspition they might enter into the shippe, forsomuch as the Captaine generall was not come thether for to deceiue the King, but onely for to get his good will, with this they were contented, to goe aboorde, yet it was with some feare, that he would take them captiues. In the meane while that we were about this the Captaine generall landed, where there was tarrieng for him sundry Caymales and Pynacales, and other principall Nayres, being accompanied with many others. And before that the Captaine generall could set his feete on the grounde, he was taken vp, and put in an Andor or chaire, in the which he was carried to the Seraine, accompanied with the multitude aboue saide. Being come to this place, he entered into a certaine house where the King was, whome he founde in this order. The house was hanged ouer with Carpets, or as they call them Alcatifas, at the ende whereof, there was a certaine place where the King was sitting, made much lyke vnto a lyttle Chappell, and ouer the Kings head did hang the cloth of Estate, of vnhorne Crimson veluet, and vnder him and about him, were twentie cushions of like. The King himselfe was all naked, sauing that about his middle he had a cloth made

Pleadges are sent aboorde, which feare to be taken captiue.

The king of Calycuts state & furniture.

Digitized by Google

made of Cotten, which was white as ſnowe, and wrought ouer with golde. On his head he had a night cap of cloath of golde, which was made of the fashion of an head peece or ſkull. On his eares he had hanging certaine Jewelles, of Diamonds, Saphyres and Pearles, of the which ther was two bigger then Walnuts. On his armes from the elbow to the hande he had ſundrye Braceletes of Golde, in the which there were precious Stones, and that without number, and of a wonderfull valewe. Moreouer on his legs from the knees downward, and on the fingers of his handes, and the toes of his feete, and especially on his great toe, there was a ring, in the which there was a Rubie ſo great and fine, that it gaue ſuch a light as was wonderfull: amongſt al which ſtones, ther was a Diamond bigger then a great Beane. But all this was nothing in comparison of his girdell, which was made of Golde and Stone that the ſame was aboue all price, and out of it there came ſuch a reſplendour or brightnes, that it blinded mens eyes to looke vpon it.

There ſtode harde by him a Chaire of Eſtate of golde and ſiluer, wrought in the beſt manner, full of precious ſtone, and of the ſelfe ſame ſort was the Andor in the which he was brought from his Pallace, which alſo ſtod there. Alſo there were twentie Trumpets, whereof ſeauentene were of ſiluer, and the other three of golde, the mouthes whereof, were finely wrought and ſet with ſtone. Alſo ther was a Baſon of golde in the which he did ſpit, and certaine perfuming pans of ſiluer, out of the which, there came an excellent ſmell. And for eſtate ſake ther wer lightned certain Lampes of Oyle, which were after the Moores order, the which were alſo made of ſiluer. Sixe paces from the King, ſtod his two brethren, which were heires vnto the Kingdome after him, and ſome what further off ſtod many Noble men, they all ſtanding vpright vppon their feete.

Of

Digitized by Google

Of the meeting of the Captaine generall, and the King of Calycut, and how there was deliuered vnto him the Kings present which he brought, and afterward what hapned. Chap. 23.

THe Captaine generall being entered into this place, and perceiuing the Kings estate, might haue gone to kisse the Kings handes, as it is commonly vsed amongst vs: but for that he was enformed by those that stode by him, that it was not the vse and custome amongst them, he did it not. Notwithstanding there was a Chaire appointed him that was hard by the Princes seate, in the which the Captaine generall did sit, that from thence he might declare his minde to the King, which was the greatest honor that he could giue him. The King set downe, he deliuered his letter of credite, which he brought from the King of Portingale, written in the Arabian tongue which being read by the King, the Captaine generall also told his message, the effect whereof was this, That the King of Portingale was desirous of his friendship, & to settle a Factorie in Calycut, in the which there should be sufficient of all kinde of Merchandize that should be spent there, & in truthe of the same, for the ready money he requested that he would let him haue sufficient lading of spices for those ships there. The King shewed himselfe to be content with this Embassage, & answered the Captaine generall that he would yeld the King of Portingale out of his Citie, all that he should haue need of. Whilst they two were in this talke, came thether the present which the Captaine generall had brought, in the which were these peces, a Bason of siluer and gylt wrought, a fountaine to the same, a Cuppe with his couer gylt, of the same worke, two Basses of siluer, foure Cushions, two of them of cloath of golde, and other two of Crimson Veluet vnthorne, a Cloath of Estate of Golde, being welted and garded with the selfe same Golde, and of Crimson

The Captaine generall deliuereth his letters of credite to the king of Calicut

The present which the generall brought with him

Digitized by Google

Crimſon velvet a verye fine Carpet, two clothes of Arras, the which were very rich, the one with figures, and the other with greene workes. Of this preſent, and of the Embaſſage which the Captaine generall had done vnto him, as it appered, the King was very glad, and tolde the Captaine generall that he might goe to his lodging to reſt himſelfe, or els to his ſhips as he would himſelfe, for that he thought neceſſary to ſend for his Pledges, which are Gentlemen and daintely brought vp, and could not alwaye with the Sea, to tarry there longer. And whileſt they were ther, he was aſſured, that they would neither eate nor drinke for ſuch was their cuſtome. And if ſo be that the Captaine generall would goe to his ſhips, and come the next day againe, to make full agreement and conſent about the order of the trade in Sacrificut, he would then ſend thoſe Pledges againe. The Captaine generall having good confidence in thoſe his words, went to his ſhips, leaving behinde him with his ſtuffe, Alonſo Hurtado with other ſeamen. And being at the water ſide ready to departe, a ſeruant of one of thoſe Pledges, went before aboord in a ſmall Pinnace, and tolde them that the Captaine generall did returne aboorde, this meſſenger was ſent by the commaundement of the Clearke and Controller of the Kings houſe, as who ſhould ſaye, to giue them counſayle to come their waye, which they did, as ſoone as they heard what the ſeruant had tolde them in their language, and with that they leapt into the Sea, thinking to take that Pinace in the which the ſeruant went. As ſoone as Aries Correa ſaw this, he leapt into his owne boate, which was harde by the ſhips ſide with certaine of his Marriners and rowing with force take two of the Pledges, and alſo three or foure of thoſe that were in the Pinace, the other fled and carried the Catuall with them, which was alſo one of the Pledges. This being concluded, the Captaine generall came aboord, who after that he had knowen what had paſſed, becauſe that thoſe Pledges the which he had in his cuſtodie, ſhould not returne and runne their waye, he commaunded them to be put vnder the hatches of his ſhip, and after-

Digitized by Google

afterward sent to complain to the King of that which they had done, laieng all the fault upon the Clarke e Controller. Also he sent worde after what sort they remained in his ship, promising, that if so be ỹ he wold send him his stuffe, e such of his men as remained a land, he would immediatly sende those Pledges which he had: and for that it was night, there was no more at that time done. The nert days following, the King came to the water side, accompanyed with xii thousand men, and sent with the Captaine Generalls stuffe and men, to the number of thirtie Almadias, for that they might returne with those Pledges that did remaine aboord, howbeit for all that they were so many, yet there durst none of them come nere the ships, for the feare they stode in of our men, which remained in the Fleete, least they wold take them, and so they returned with the same againe to land. The Captaine Generall seing the feare that they stod in of his Fleete, sent the nert days in certaine of his owne boates those Pledges that he had in custodie, commaunding that they should goe, and see them delivered somwhat aloofe off from the fleet, that brought him his men and stuffe. And while they were delivering the same, Araxamenoca which was the eldest of the Pledges, leaped into the water vppon a sodaine, with intent to runne away, but for all that he could not escape, forasmuch as our men caught hande fast of him. The other that remained, whilest our men were thus busied fled lykewise. The lyke did Alonso Hurtado practise with five of those that wer with him. The Captaine generall mervailed to see how little honestie of truth they vsed, did therefore commaund Araxamenoca to be well looked vnto. And being three dayes past, and yet the King not sending for him, he had pittie to see him that in so many dayes he had eaten nothing, and therupon he sent him to the King, also he sent sundry weapons which were taken of his mens, and required him to send the other two of his men that were yet a land, which the King did sende, being moued thereunto, more for shame then otherwise, for that he had broken his worde e promise. Now being three dayes

Humair pity in t Captain generall tovvard faithles Infidel.

Digitized by Google

paſſ, and there came no kinde of aunſ were vnto the Captaine generall, thereby he had ſufficient tryall or vnderſtanding how variable he was, and therefore he woulde tarrye no longer for his aunſ were, but ſent vnto him to knowe whether he wold make an end of the agreement ỹ was begun betweene them, and for the concluſion of the ſame he would ſende Aries Correa which came with him for Factor. Howbeit for the better aſſurance therof, he willed him to ſend him certaine Pledges. This meſſage was ſent to the King by a certaine Gentleman called Francisco Correa, which did offer himſelf to tarry the ſame, when all the reſt of the Fleete was afeard, leaſt that the King woulde take him priſoner, or commande him to be ſlaine. To this meſſage ỹ King made anſwere ỹ he was well pleaſed to agree to haue the Trade ſetled, and that he ſhoulde ſende vnto him Aries Correa about the ſame or whom els he ſhould thinke good. But firſt of all he tolde him that he woulde ſende two Nephewes of one Goſarate, which is a great rich Merchaunt, for pledges, which indeed was ſo done. After that thoſe pledges were entred, immediately departed toward the land Aries Correa, to whom the King commaunded to be giuen a faire houſe to lye and reſt himſelfe and to lay his Merchandize in, which he brought with him, which houſe belonged to Goſarate, who was Grandfather to thoſe two Pledges, that the King had ſent. But he commanded that foraſmuch as Aries Correa, was yet not well knowen in the Countrey nor acquainted with their orders & prices how he might ſel his Merchandize, nor yet what the buyer ſhuld giue, to inſtruct him therein. But he did not ſo, but rather cleane contrarye, foraſmuch as he was a friend to ỹ Moores of Mecca, which were great enimies vnto our men, not onelye for that they were Chriſtians, but for feare leaſt that for our cauſe they ſhuld loſe part of ther credit which they had in Calicut, by meanes wherof they tolde their Merchandize for what prices ſoeuer they would themſelues. And alſo for the feare they conceiued of them many times, the Gentiles durſt not come out of their doores.

The pledges ſent aboord.

They

They knew also that having our Factory settled there, they should be great losers, not onely in their Merchandize, which would be in value lesse than also in their Spices, Drugs & precious stones, which would be more worth & better esteemed. And that was the cause that alwaies Aries Correa was overthwarted in all things ỳ he went about to buy, with offering more then he did for the same, after ỳ the price was by any of ours made, then ever they did before, so ỳ by this meanes alwayes he was forced to pay the deerer for his drugs & spices. And if so be that at any time he would speake with ỳ King, they did travell all ỳ they could, that some of them might be allwayes present to withstand & speak against him in all things. They did not this onely theese, but found meanes also by Samarides, which was Admirall of the Sea of Calicut, & a naturall Moore, ỳ he should not consent ỳ those ỳ remained in ỳ Factory wᵗ Aries Correa should go aboard ỳ Fleete, & moreover if any ship would presume to come neere to ỳ shore, not to consent ỳ it should return saieng, ỳ the King had given such cõmandement. The Captaine generall being advertised of all this, & supposing the same to be of a suspition of treason, commanded to wey and bring himselfe under saile to goe out of that harbour, and there to enter into councell with his Captaines what were best for him to do, for that he was afeard lest whilest ỳ he remained in that harbour he might be set upon by ỳ King of Calicuts Fleete, & so be troubled. The King after ỳ he knew what the Captains generall had done, & that he minded to go his way, demaunded of Aries Correa the cause why he went out of his harbour, who aunswered him that he did not know certainely, wherefore without it were for the injuries which the Moores had done unto him, & so told him ỳ whole order, for that he knew the same. The King upon this willed him to send againe for the Captaine generall, who immediately after that he knew what the King had said, returned, & the King forthwith commanded that the Moores should not from thenceforth use anye such villany. He also take awaye the Golarate from the companye of Aries Correa,

The Captaine generall had good cause to feare and hate the Mooros

Digitized by Google

vnto whom he gaue charge to inſtruct him in the order of the Countrey, and did put in his place another which was a very honeſt man, and a friend of ours, (although he were a Moze) whoſe name was Coſebequin. This man was alſo in Calicut of good credite, and the head of all the Mozes of the Countrey, that were naturally borne there, which were alwayes in controuerſie with the Mozes of the Cayro, and of the Straights of Meca, of the which the Admirall was head. Alſo the King gaue commaundement, that to the end our Merchaunts which were in the Factozie might ſell the better, and alſo buye theyr Spices at the better hande, and with quietneſſe, they ſhoulde remoue theyr Factozie to a houſe of Coſebequin, the which ſtode harde by the water ſide. And of this houſe, a gifte was giuen to the King of Protingale for euer by writing, the Copie whereof, forſomuch as the Captaine generall ſhould carry it with him, was incloſed in a Tablet of golde, to the which the King did ſet to his firme and ſeale, alſo the Kings pleaſure was, that vpon the top of the houſe there ſhould be ſet a flagge, with the royall armes of Portingale, that all men might knowe, that the ſame was his. Which after that the Captaine generall had knowledge of, he ſent vnto the King great thanks for the ſame, and from that time forwarde they had indifferent good ſales by the helpe of Coſebequin, who did aide them therein. As ſone as thoſe of the Countrey had vnderſtanding that our Factorye was by the King ſo fauoured, they lykewiſe did the lyke. Afterward our men might goe whereſoeuer they would without any moleſtation, and as ſure as they might in Liſhborne. So the friendſhippe betweene them and our men, was afterward very good.

A free houſe for the factory giuē to the king of Portingale by deede

¶ How at the requeſt of the King of Calycut, the Captaine Generall ſent to take a ſhippe of the Moores, and alſo after what ſort the ſame was taken. Cap. 24.

Whileſt

Digitized by Google

&c.

WHilest this friendship continued betweene our men and the Citie, and they being in so great a friendship and concord one with another, on the next saterday following there did appeare to those of Calycut, a greate ship of the Portes, which was far off, going from Cochin towards Cambaya. And as soone as ẏ same was discryed, the king sent worde to the Captaine Generall, requesting him that for his sake he would send to take the same ship, for over and besides that, there were in the same certeine Elephantes, yet was there one which exceeded them all, the which he would have bought. And although he had offred for him more then he was worth, yet he would not sell him. Albeit the owner was a dweller in Cochin, and therefore he most earnestly requested him to send to take the sayd shippe, forsomuch as it did so highly touch his honour and credit: unto his request, the Captaine Generall made answere that he would doe it with a good will, although that he was informed that the sayd shippe was great, and that there were within it very many men both Marriners and Souldiers, and that the same could not bee taken without some losse of men, and therefore it was requisite that he consented that his men might kill those ẏ were in the ship, whereunto the king agreed. This being concluded, the Captaine Generall commaunded that Pedro de Tayde with his Caruell, should goe take the sayd ship, and that there should goe with him a young Gentleman called Edwarte Pacheco, which was thought to bee a valiant souldier, and with these there was a 60. men.

The king also sent certeine Pintes in the Caruel, that they also might view the order of their fighting. The Caruell being under saile gane chase unto the shippe till it was night, which being come, they lost sight of the same, and going along the coast all the quarter of the Wone, they saw where he was riding at Anker, and then Edwarte Pacheco commaunded to leave with him, and found those Pintes

Digitized by Google

WIth the taking of this ſhip the Moores of Calicut were greatly afrighted in minde, and more offended with ỹ king for that he made ſo great account of our men, which as they thought was done to reuenge their iniuryes, and for the hatred or enuye they had conceiued againſt vs, though indeede the king made more account of our men then he did of them. By this meanes as they thought, it was no other but to prouoke them to leaue his Countrie, in ſpeciall for as much as our men brought them ſuch great ſtore of Merchandiſe, & as much good as they did, and brought as great ſtore of ſpices as they did: Therefore they determined to make vnto the king an Oration conterning the ſame matter. And being ioyned together ſpake in the name of them all, one on this ſort.

The Moores Oration againſt our men.

EMparethan of all the Malabars, nothing leſſe mightie then the mightieſt king of the Indias, & moſt fearefull amongeſt thoſe that are feared of all the Princes of the ſame: We cannot but meruaile much that thou hauing theſe thy qualyties, wouldeſt imbaſe thy ſelfe to receiue into thy Countrie theſe ỹ are enimyes to thy law, & ſtraungers to the cuſtomes of thy kingdome, & laſt of all, doe rather appeare to be rouers then merchants. If thou doeſt receiue them for want of ſuch as ſhoulde bring vnto thy Citie thoſe kindes of merchaundiſe that they do bring, or elſe carrie away thoſe kinde of Spices that they are deſirous of, we would then allowe thereof. But there are to many that doth the ſame, and men that thou haſt knowne of a long time, and by the long continuance of them art acquainted with their fidelitie, which haue encreaſed ſo much thy rents, that therof we are a good witneſſe. But thou hauing forgotten all this, wouldeſt receiue thoſe whom thou diddeſt not knowe, and doeſt fauour them ſo much, that amongeſt ſo many, and ſuch a multitude of good ſubiectes as thou haſt, wouldeſt make choice of them, that they ſhoulde reuenge thy iniuries, as though thine owne ſubiects were not ſufficient men to doe the ſame. By which deede thou

doeſt

Digitized by Google

doeſt abaſe thy power ſo much, that we for very ſhame, & for that we are bound of duetie to bring it into thy memorie. For if ſo be y thou well conſider what it is to make the reuengers of thy iniuries, & giue them in reſpect thereof ſo great honour, it is as it were to ſhewe them plainly a certeine kinde of weakneſſe which indeed is not in thy ſubiects, but rather doeſt bylden them to make ſmall account of thee, & ſo afterward to do that which we doe well knowe they will do, which is to rob from all merchants that commeth towards thy portes, to deſtroy thy countrey, & at length to take the Citie, which is the end of their comming into theſe parts, & not to ſeeke for ſpices, and this is moſt true, that from their countrie vnto this is almoſt fiue thouſand leagues by ſea, with returnes and ſtormes that the ſame voyage hath ouer and beſides the great daunger of the voiage, & the charges of the making of their great ſhippes, and furniſhing the ſame with ordinance, beſides the ſtrengthening of them with men much more all this being well noted it is plaine, that for all their great gaines which they might haue by their ſpices in Portingale, their loſſes would be greater, in comming ſo far for them, which is a manifeſt proofe that they are rather pirats then merchants, which come into the country to rob and take thy citie, as they will do, if ſo be they do place themſelues once within the ſame. And when they that poſſeſſe the ſame houſe which thou diddeſt giue them for a factorie, they will make there a fort, from whence they will make thee wars, when thou ſhalt thinke leaſt of it, which thing will come to paſſe, and now the rather, ſince that thou doeſt commaunde the ſame to be made by thy ſubiectes. But this as we ſaie wee doe bring to thy memorie more for the good will which we doe owe to thee, then for any profit we doe looke for. And if it fortune that thou wilt not remember vs, there are other cities in Malabar where we maye make our habitation, whether for our ſakes will be brought all ſtore of ſpices. Ouer and beſides all this, the loyaltie which we doe owe vnto thee doth make vs to feare more the loſſe of thy eſtate,

Proues that vvee vvere rather pirats then merchants.

Digitized by Google

then to care for our owne profit.

As ſoone as the Moore had made an end of his Oration, the king did gratifie them all very much, and tolde them that he woulde haue a ſpeciall care of all that which they had remembred him of, and how in the ſelfe ſame ſorte hee ſuppoſed y matter indeed would come to paſſe. The occaſion that the king take to requeſt the Generall to ſend to take that ſhip, was to ſee the experience of their valiant minds, & alſo why he did conſent to y lading of their ſhips, was to the end there might remaine in the countrie their monye which they brought to buie merchaundiſe withall, according as he did to ſuch merchants as come into his port. Alſo at the laſt he did promiſe that he woulde not forſake them for any ſtraunger. Yet for all this, the Moores did not remaine fully ſatiſfied, becauſe the king did not command vs to depart out of the citie of Calycut, and not ſuffer our men to trade ther any longer, for that was the principalleſt thing that they did pretende. Notwithſtanding they woulde not let but entermeddle in all our matters, eſpeciall in the buieng of our Spices, which they did openly buye, and ſent them ſecretly vnto other places. This was done with a determinatiõ, for y they could not away with our men, but would reſiſt them, our men being thus reſiſted might then haue occaſion the better to defend themſelues, & ſo by this meanes they would reuenge their quarrels openly by fighting with our men. This they had great deſire to do, thinking to deſtroy our men openly, for that they were manye more in number then ours were, they hoped that when this matter was once begun, that then the king would take their parts. Alſo they wrought by all meanes poſſible to haue the common ſorte of people on their ſide, inciting them againſt our men, with matters which they made them beleeue that our men had done againſt them.

why he requeſted our men to take the ſhip of Meca.

Digitized by Google

How the Moores that dwelled in Calycut by meanes of the Factor & countenance they had at the kings hand, did set vpon the Factorye, where was slaine in defence there of the Factor with other of his company. Cap. 36.

BY meanes of this subtile dealing of the Moores, there past three monethes before the Factor could get any spices more then hee had, to lade two ships withall: which was a great griefe to the Captaine Generall, forasmuch as thereby he perceiued very well that the friendship of the king was not steadfast, but that he was a lyar, and a man that vsed no truth at all. And if so be that he had not tarried there so long time as he did, fearing that in no other porte hee should finde sufficient lading for his shippes, he would haue fallen out with him, and so haue gone to some other place. But forasmuch as he hadde bene there at so greate charges, he dissimuled therewith onely to see whether with his good will he might lade there or no. The Captaine Generall seeing that all thinges were but delayes, sent vnto the king, requesting him to remember those promises he hadde made vnto the Factour, that within twentye dayes he would deliuer sufficient lading for the whole Fleete, and that nowe there were three monethes past, and yet there was no more laden then two shippes. The occasion whereof he did not knowe, and therefore he was the willinger to suffer the same, and that with great patience, hoping alwayes that he would giue order for the lading of the rest of the Fleet. But now he saine howe all things went, and knew that it was impossible to make an ende thereof. The king accused plainly of doblenes.

For although he had promised that his Fleete should be the first that should be laden before any other straungers,

Digitized by Google

and that he was enformed for most certeine, ỳ the Moores had bought for a lesse price great store of Spices, and sent the same to other places, whether they would, he therefore requested him yet to haue him in his remembrance, ỳ now it was time for him to depart towards Portingale, desiring him to dispatch him as he hadde promised. The king as sone as he had heard what the messenger sayd, did shewe as in an outward appearance greatly meruailing that our ships remained yet vnladen, and aunswered that hee was very sorie therefore, and that he could not beleeue that the Moores contrarie to his commaundement had bought spices vnder a couloure, and sent the same a boorde some other ship whether it pleased them, he hauing giuen commaundement to the contrarie, namely, that the Moores should not buie any spices in hugger mugger. Affirming that if it bee so they had so deceiued him, he would punish them therefore. Upon this immediatly he gaue commaundement to take those shippes that were laden with Spices, with condition that they should pay for the same the price that the Moores had bought at. The newes was brought forthwith vnto the Moores, and as there was nothing more acceptable vnto them, then to haue occasion to fall out with our men, so therefore did one of the principall Moores beginne to lade his shippe first, and that openlye with all sortes of Spices and Drugges. And for that scholar might the more increase in our men, to take those spices, hee found meanes that certeine Moores which the Factor took to bee his verye friends, and also certeine Gentiles, should make him beleeue that if so be that hee did not send to take that ship, that was a lading, that then he could not haue lading sufficient for the Fleete.

Nothing more acceptable to the Mores the to quarell & fall out with our men,

The Factor gaue credit vnto this report, and thereupon sent worde to the Captaine Generall, what the Moores and Gentiles had tolde him, and that he thought their saying to be true. And therefore since the king of Calicut had giuen him license to take all such Spices as the Moores had laden, hee might the better nowe take that Shipps.

Now-

Digitized by Google

Nothwithstanding the Captaine generall was loath to deale therwith for all the Kings license, for he knew him to be an inconstant man, and waying also the great credit, that the Moores were in with him, he was afeard least that after they had taken the said shippe, the Moores through the Kings favour would rise against them. And this was the cause were that was sent to the Factor: yet for all that he did require him once more to take that ship, saieng, that if he did not, that then the King should be in hazarde to lose such Merchandize as he had therin: nevertheless the Captaine generall would not meddle therewith, alleaging for that his determination sufficient reason to the contrary. But the Factor on the other part ceased not to make unto him sundry requests, and protestations, that he should paye all such losses and damages, as should hap upon the King of Portingales Merchandize, by his defaults, for that he would not deale with the sayde ship. Thus since he saw there was no other remedie, he consented therunto, although it were against his will. And therfore the xvi. day of December, the Captaine generall sent word to those that were aboord ỹ ship, that was thus laden by the Moores, by the order which was sent him from the King of Calicut, to commaund them to depart, and for as much as they made but little reckoning thereof, he sent the next daye all his boates to bring her within the harbour. After that this report came to the owner of the ships knowledge, they made the Moores privie hereof, whereof they were very glad, for that by this meanes there was offered unto them occasion to fall out with our men. Hereupon, they began in a furious outrage, running out of their doores like madde men, complaining upon us and our people, by meanes whereof, they were tumultuously moued, and framed great outcryes and larums, and allwayes against our men. And after that they had thus done, they ranne to the King, with whom went the owner of the ship, complaining also upon our men for the detaining of his ship, saieng that our men had bought and laden much more spices & drugs, then that the Merchandize came unto which they had

The Moores moued a tumult against our men.

Digitized by Google

brought with them, howbeit their pryne was ſuch, that they were content with nothing, but as Théeues and Pirates would haue all. At this inſtant came the Moores, which did before helpe him very much, declaring many things againſt our men, & how much the king was in fault, for ſuffering them within this Citie, requeſting him moſt earneſtlye to giue them licenſe to reuenge their loſſe, which they had receiued. The king as he was inconſtant and without anye ſoclitie, did graunt them the ſame. As ſone as the Moores had obtained their requeſt, they came their waye from the king, and toke their weapons, and with a ſauage fiercenes, lyke wilde beaſts, ranne into the Citie in flockes towarde the Factorie, which was compaſſed about like a Caſtle, with the wall of the height of a man on horſebacke, in the which were lyx. Portingales amongſt whom was Fryer Henrick with his cõpany of Friers. Ther wer amongſt our men no more weapons then 8. Croſſebowes, all ỹ reſt had nothing but ſwoords & cloakes, as ſone as they knew of ỹ enimies cõming, they ran to the gates of the Factory, & when ỹ they ſaw they were ſo few, they iudged them to be ſome quarelers that came thether for the ſame purpoſe, & therefore wer minded to defend their gates, with their cloakes & rapiers only: but afterward their power increaſed ſo much vpõ our men, that by reaſon of their arrowes and ſpeares, they could not indure ther any longer: then ỹ Factor commanded their gates to be ſhut vp, ſuppoſing that from the wal they would driue their enimies from thence, & at the very ſhutting vp of the gates, there were ſeuen of the enimies ſlaine, ỹ which gates could not be ſhut without great daunger, alwayes fighting valiantly. In this conflict, ther wer of our men many hurt, & foure ſlaine: howbeit as well thoſe ỹ wer hurt as thoſe ỹ wer in health, went vp vpon ỹ wal of ỹ Factory, for to defend their enimies from thence with their croſſebowes. Howbeit the multitude of them at that preſent was ſo great that they made ſhewe as if they had bene in number foure thouſande. There came alſo to aide them ſundrye Nayres, which all of them together, began to ſet vpon thoſe that wer

The ſauage fiercenes of the Moores againſt our men.

in

the Factorie hoping thereby to enter. Aries Correa seeing ỹ it was impossible for him to defend it any lõger without some aide from the ships, and for to giue them to vnderstand of their troubles, there was displaide a flagge in the top of the Factorie: and as soone as the same was discryed by the Captaine generall, he suspected it in himselfe to be that which indeede it was, for the which sodaine chance he was very sorrowfull, for that as then he was but newly let bloud, and sicke in his bed, and therefore he could not go himselfe to succour them: howbeit he sent Sancho de Toar, to supply his roome, with all the Fleetes boats, which went with such men as they had, but to resist such a number as there was of their enimies, they were very few, which Sancho de Toar perceiuing, durst not disimbarke himselfe, neither yet come too neere the shore least that the enimies should come in their Almadias and Tonys, and so take them, also that they could not hurt them, they laye so farre off from the shore: but they from thence could discerne how valyantly our men did defende themselues and there entring, although the number of their enimies did alwayes increase, for so it was needful for ỹ great slaughter, ỹ our men made of thẽ, from ouer ỹ wall. Notwithstanding by meanes thereof their fury did so increase, ỹ they caused to be brought certain engins to ouerthrow part of ỹ wall wall, which were so great, that our men could not by any meanes defend the same, being so few and so many hurt, with the enimies arrowes and speares, which came from them as thicke, as though it had rained arrowes. But perceiuing once the enimie began to enter, they would not tarrie there any longer, but went forth of the Factorye, by a dore that opened toward the water side, where they made reckoning to saue themselues with their boats. But ỹ enimies followed them alwaies so narrowly, hurting and killing them, that in this conflict Aries Correa was slaine, so that there were lacking fiftie of our men, betweene those that were dead and taken captiues, twentie onely escaped, which toke the water, but those were sore hurt, amongst whome was a Fryer called

Succour sent by ỹ Generall Captaine to the Factorie.

Fryer

Digitized by Google

Fryer Henricke, and a ſon of the ſaid Aries Correa, which was but eleuen yeares of age, who is yet aliue and is called Antonio Correa, and ſince that time hath done in the Indias, and in other places notable acts of Armes, as in the fourth booke I ſhall declare. Thoſe that did eſcape, wer taken into our boates, and carried to the Fleete.

¶ How the Captaine generall ſlewe the moſt parte of thoſe Moores that were aboorde the ten great ſhips, and then commanded them to be ſet a fire, & alſo of the great deſtruction which he brought vpon the citie in reuenge of the death of thoſe that were ſlaine therein. Cap. 37.

AFter that theſe newes were brought to the Captaine generall, he was not onely very ſorrowfull for the death of thoſe that were ſlaine, but alſo to ſee how little preuailed the preſent which he gaue vnto the king of Calicut, as alſo the taking of the ſhip, in the which was the Elephant, & now three moneths were paſt that he had bene there, and yet had laden no more then two ſhips, nor yet could tell when to lade the reſt, fearing alſo leſt in Cochin he ſhoulde not be well accepted, for taking of the ſhip in the which was the Elephant. And further waying with himſelfe, how little or none occaſion at all there was giuen to vſe ſuch treaſon againſt our men, he did therefore determine to reuenge himſelfe vpon ỹ king of Calycut, if ſo be that he did not vſe ſome excuſe for that which was paſt, whereunto if he would willingly yelde, then would he be content, ſo that he might ther haue his lading. But the king of Calycut was farre off from the matter, for he was very glad of that which ỹ Moores had done, and commaunded all ſuch merchandize to be taken, as were within the Factorie, the which wer well worth foure thou-

The king of Calicut vvas farre off from making a mendes.

Digitized by Google

thousand duckets, & also take all such of ours as wer found aliue for captiues, although they were hurt, of the which there were foure that died. After all this, the Captaine generall seeing that in all that daye the king of Calecut sent no messenger to excuse himselfe of the fact, he put the matter in question, whereas it was determined that he forthwith should reuenge those iniuries that were paste, for feare leste if he should delay so to doe, that then the king might haue time to arme his fleete, which would not then be so easelye done. This being determined, our men put themselues in a readinesse, to lay aboord x. great ships, which lay in ỹ harbor full of Moores: these at the first would haue defended themselues, yet for all ỹ our men did ioyne with them, & fought with them so valyantly, that they brake their order, killing many of them, and of those that remained some leaped into the water and were drowned, others hid themselues in their ships, and other were taken aliue, whom the Captains generall commaunded to prison, that they might afterwarde serue for Mariners in the fleet. The ships being thus come into our mens possession, they found within the same some Spices and other Merchandize which were hidden within them: also they found three Elephants, which the Captains generall commaunded to be killed and salted for their victualls, he commaunded also those Moores that were slaine to be told, and there was found of them 600. The ships being discharged of all that they had, they wer set a fire before all the Citie, in the sight of many that came to the water side to succor them, whom being Moores, as they were comming in their Almadias, our men encountered and fought with them, but they durst not goe forward for feare of the ordinaunce. This was a wonder to those of the Citie, to see ten ships burnt together. The king also was sory therefore for that he could not send to succour them. But if that which was done this day was a wonder to the enimies to behold, then ỹ next day was much more to be marueiled at, for the Captaine generall not being contented with the burning of these ships commaunded his ships in the night to be brought

Iust reuenge vvroughe vpon the iniurious Calecutās

Digitized by Google

succeede in Calycut, he immediately goeth to Coching, and dispossesseth him that hath the same, of the whole kingdome and taketh possession himselfe therof, so that by this meanes it lyeth in his handes, whether he will restore that king to the crowne again, or not. Also the king of Coching is bound to aide and accompany the king of Calycut in battaile against any other king, if he be bounde to lye in the religion of the king of Calicut. The Captaine generall, being come to this harbour, did therefore fall his Anker, so that he was aforde to send Gaspar with a message to the king, least he would runne away, he chose rather to send one whose name was Michael Ogne, which although he were a Gentile & a straunger, yet he came unto our Fleete, with intent to turne Christian, saieng that he would goe for Portingale: whereupon the Captaine generall toke occasion to baptize him, and gaue him the name of Michael, & for his surname as he was called before. By this man he sent to ye king of Coching his message, certifieng him of all that they had past in Calicut, & also ye the Captain generall had brought in him great store of Merchandize to giue in trucke for such commodities as there were in Coching, with the which if so be that the king were not contented that then he would buy the same for ready money, whereof he had brought with him great store, and therefore his request was that in trucke of his merchandize, or for his ready money he should giue him lading for foure ships. The answere that the king made to this messenger, was, That he was very glad of his comming to this his Port, for that he was well informed of his strength and valiantnesse, and therfore he esteemed them all the better, as hereafter he should well perceiue. And as for such Spices as he had there, he would giue him lading in trucke of his Merchandize ye he had brought with him from Portingale, or els for money as he should thinke best. And also that without any feare he might send a land whom he should thinke good to prouide the said lading, & for the rest he needed not to feare that any thing should be taken away by the king or his people, for he would see every man be chaunge

A Moore baptised & called Michael.

chaunge them and take them out, so that all such as did fede a sea battle, could not come anye more in the kings presence. The Captaine Generall was well contented therewith, who had the sending of those pledges so quietly a land, for a good beginning, and therefore he sent immediatly for Factor of this lading Gonsallo Gilbarbosa, which was sent before with Aries Correa, and for his Scriuenor he sent Larenco Moreno, and for Interpretour one called Maderade Alcusia. Also the Captaine Generall commaunded to be deliuered vnto them and to serue them in all kinde of affaires, foure banished men.

The king hauing notice of the comming of the Factor a land, sent to receiue him the Regiber of the Citie, who went accompanyed with many noble men of the Courte, who brought them before the king. This king euen as his rents did farre differ in value from the king of Calycut, so he did also differ very much in his estate, not onely for ỹ furniture of his person, but also of the place in the which he was in, For there appeared nothing elle but the verye bare walls. The king himselfe was sitting within certeine grates, made much lyke a Theatre, with the which the whole house was compalled aboute, and there was attending vppon him verie few men. The Factor beeing come before the king, did present vnto him a present which the Captaine Generall sent him, which was a Balon of siluer to wash his hands in, full of Saforre, and a greate Ewer of siluer full of rose water, besides certeine braunches of Corall, this present the king receiued very ioyfully, giuing vnto the Captaine Generall great thanks for the same, and after that he had talked a while with the factor, and with Larenco Moreno, he commaunded them to be lodged, and so there remained those three a land, besides the other foure banished men. But the Captaine Generall would not consent there should remaine a land anye more, for he iudged that the fewer ther remained a land, the fewer would be lost if so be that there should chaunce the lyke misfortune to that which did in Calycut. Howbeit that was

The king of Cochin much inferior in wealth & state to ỹ king of Calycut.

Digitized by Google

same writes, for y^t the king of Cochin seemed to be a man inclined to vertue, call the loialtie in the same, which well appeared in his favour, & in the vsing of our men, & in the dispatch he made for the lading of our ships with spices, & in the commanding of helpe to be given by those of y^r countrie, which they did so willingly and with so great a zeale, that the same seemed to be ordeined of God, that the trade might be brought from Calycut to Cochin, & that his holy Catholike faith might increase in the Indias, as y^t same did, besides the estate of y^e king of Portingale, which might increase also in riches, as the same hath done.

How the Captaine Generall being at Cochin, there came vnto him a Priest which was an Indian and a christian, from the citie of Grangalor, to go with him to Portingale, and also what els he tolde him of the christians of this citie. Chap. 39

THe Captaine Generall being in this citie & laden, there came vnto him two Indians which as they said were christians, & naturally borne in y^e citie of Grangalor, which is hard by Cochin, these were brothers, & were desirous to go to Portingale, & frō thence to Rome to see the Pope, & afterward to Ierusalem to visit y^e holy sepulchre. And being demanded by y^e Captaine generall what citie y^e Grangalor was, & whether the same was only inhabited by christians, & also whether they do esteeme y^e christiā order of y^e Greeks, or of y^e church of Rome: one of thē made answere, y^t Grangalor was a great citie in y^e prouince of Malabar, standing within y^e country at y^e end of a riuer which cōpasseth y^e same, by some parts y^e inhabitāts therof, saith he, are both Gētiles & christiās, also ther dwel amōgst thē many Iewes which are finally esteemed of, ther are also many strangers amongst thē, which are merchants of Surria, of Aegipt, of Persia, & Arabia, by reason of y^e great store of pepper which is there gathered, this citie hath a king amongst thēselues, vnto whō al such christians as dwel within this citie do pay certein tribute, & these dwel by thēselues, where they haue their church made after our order, sauing they haue not in thē any Images of saints, but only certein crosses: they do not vse bels, but when y^e priests would haue them

The discriptiō & state of Grāgalor.

Digitized by Google

thē come to diuine seruice, thē they do obserue ꝯ order of ꝯ Greeks. The christiās haue their Popes which haue 12. cardinals, & two patriarks, & many Bishops & Archbishops, all which do reside in Armenia, for whether go ꝯ bishops of Grangalor to receiue their dignity, he himself had ben ther vñ a bishop which ꝯ pope did consecrate, & he himself receiued at his hands, orders of priesthood, & euen so he is accustomed to do vnto al others ꝯ are christians in ꝯ Indias, & in Cattaio & also he is called catholike, & their Tonsura is made vñ a crosse. Of those two patriarks which they haue, ꝯ one remaineth in ꝯ Indias, & ꝯ other in Cattaio, & as for ꝯ bishops they are reposed in cities, as is thought conuenient. The cause why they haue a pope in those parts hath ben as is thought by thē, for ꝯ in S. Peters time he being in Antioch, ther arose a great scisme of Simon Magus, which was ꝯ occasiō ꝯ he was called to Rome to quench ꝯ scisme, & to help ꝯ christians which wer in great trouble and being ꝯ he must depart frō Antioch, & for ꝯ the church of ꝯ orient should not remaine wout a shepheard, he appointed a vicar to gouern, who, S. Peter being dead, should remaine for pope, & those ꝯ succeeded him should alwaies assist him in Armenia, but after ꝯ Mores entred into Suria & Asia, & for ꝯ Armenia remained alwaies in the christian faith & the Christians did therfore chuse to gouerne it by 12. cardinals. Marco Paulo doth also make mentiō of this catholike pope, wher he writeth of this Armenia, in which he declareth there are two orders of Christians: the one of those are Nestorians, the other Iacobites, their pope is also named Iacobite, & is he who thē they cal ꝯ catholike Ioseph. Moreouer he told ꝯ Captaine general ꝯ in Grangalor are priests whose crowns are not shauen as ours are, but onely in ꝯ midst of their heads they leaue certein haires, al ꝯ rest is shauen, & also they haue deacons & subdeacons. They consecrate vñ leuened bread & with wine made of raisons, for they haue no other in ꝯ cōtry. Their children are not baptised vntil xl. daies after their birth, without they be sickly. Those ꝯ are christians as cōfesse thēselues as we do, they receiue ꝯ sacrament & bury ꝯ dead as we doe.

Why the christians of Indias hath a Pope.

The manner of shauing their priests differing frō ours.

They

Digitized by Google

They doe not vse the holy Oyle, but in steede of the same they doe blesse them, & when that any die, they gather many of themselues together, and for the space of viii. daies, they doe eate abundantly, and afterward they celebrate the obsequies of the dead. They make their testament before they dy, & those y did not so, the next heire shal inherit their lands and goods, & if so be that the husband die first, the wife shal haue her dowrie, on condition that she shall not marrie in one whole yeare after, when that they enter in their churches, they take holy water. Their opinion is that there are foure Euangelists, whose writings they haue in great veneration. They fast the Lent and the Aduent with great solempnitie, and take no regard not to breake the same, during this time they doe exercise themselues in prayer, & on Easter euen they neither doe eate nor drinke any thing till the next day. They vse vsually to heare Sermons on holy Friday at night, they obserue the day of the resurrection with great solempnitie, with out any other daies following, and also the sunday next following, for that Saint Thomas on that day did put his hands into Christs side, they do keepe it with great solempnitie, acknowledging thereby that the same was no fantasie or dreame. Also they keepe holy with great deuotion the Ascention day & Trinitie Sunday, & the Assumption of our ladye, her birth, & Candlemas day, & Christmas day, & all the Apostles & Sundaies, as wel the Christians as y Gentiles. And they with great deuotion keep y first day of July in the honour of S. Thomas, they could yelde no reason or cause why they doe obserue that daie. They haue Fryers of Negroes which doe liue very chastly. Also there are Nunnes of the same order. Their Priests doe liue verye chastly, for if so be that they doe not so, they are depriued from celebrating. There can be no separating of the man and woman, but well or ill they must liue together till death doe separate them. They receiue the Sacrament three times in the yeare, they haue amongst them greate Doctours, and open schooles, in the which are read the Prophets, and also there were in times past olde auncient doc-

Negro friers professing chastitie.

tors

doctors, which haue left the Scriptures of the olde & newe Testament well expounded or interpreted. Their apparell is after the order of ỹ Moores. They haue their day which they do call Intercalor, which is of 40. houres. They know how the day passeth away by the Sun, & the night by the stars, for they haue no clocks. The Captaine generall was very glad of the company of this Ioseph & his brother to carry them to Portingale, for whom he commanded a good cabine should be giuen them in his ship.

Of the great Fleet of ships that was sent out of Calicut to fight with the Captaine Generall, and what was the cause that ours did not fight with them. And also of his departure from Coching toward Portingale, and how in his way he was driuen to Cananor. Chap. 40.

THe Captaine Generall being in this harbour, ther came vnto him a messenger frō the king of Cananor, & also from the king of Coulan (they both being great princes) in ỹ kingdome of Malabar, requesting him to come to their ports or harbours, for ỹ they would giue him sufficient lading for his ships, better cheape then in Coching, with verye many other offers of friendship. To whom he made answere by a messenger that he sent, yeelding vnto them most hearty thanks, certifieng them ỹ at this present he could not go to lade at their ports, for that he had begun to take in the same already at Coching, notwithstanding at his next retourne he would do so, immediatly after ỹ he had laden his ships, there was seene a sea boord a fleete of 25. great ships, besides other small vessels. And ỹ king of Coching hauing notice therof, sent word forthwith to the Captaine Generall, ỹ there was in that fleet 10. thousand fighting men which came onely to none other purpose, but to seeke him out, and therefore if so bee

A greate Fleete of enimies.

Digitized by Google

that he should haue any need of men, to send him word, & he would prouide him therof. The Captaine Generall answered, that as yet he had no such neede, for that with those few that hee had with him, he trusted in God, to giue them to vnderstand, what ill councell they had taken, to come & set him out, for that hee had well experimented their strength. Truth it was the Generall beleeued steadfastly, as hee hadde spoken, in respect of that which hee before had past in the harbour or porte of Calycut. First with ten great shippes which hee founde there, as also with certeine that were there a grounde. And although the enymyes were scouring vp and downe in the Sea, yet therby it was apparaunt that they durst not come to the place where hee was, by a league, for all that they shewed themselues to be set in order to fight. The Captaine Generall perceiuing their intent, caused to wey Ankor, and hauing his Sailes spread abroade, departed with all his Fleete towarde his enimyes, in the which there went those Pleadges Malabars, which the King of Coching hadde giuen vnto him. Howbeit his determination was, to returne againe to Coching, and so to deliuer them.

And going after this sorte, there fell vppon them on a sodayne such a greate storme which came with a contrarye winde, that hee was faine to retourne and to come to an Ankor againe, so that hee coulde not beare with his enymies.

The nert daye following which was the tenth daye of Januarye. 1501. the winde came about in such sorte and so large, that the one Fleete might laye the other aborde. The Captaine Generall beeing desirous therof, founde vppon a sodeine missing one of his greate Shippes, in the which went Sancho de Tear, vnto whome it did well appeare, by reason it was night, that he had forgotten himselfe. And for because that nert vnto this shippe, this was the principallest of all the Fleete, in the which were placed the chiefest men, it was not thought good to fight without him, the rather for that in

Digitized by Google

the others he hadde but seuen men, and of them the moste parte were sicke, and of the enymyes were so manye as the king of Cochin had sent him wonde.

He maketh toward Portingale.

And as the winde was prosperous to goe forwarde on his voyage towarde Portingale, and verye scant to returne towarde Cochin, he departed, making his course into the Sea with his whole Fleete. After whome the whole Fleete of the enimies followed, all that daye till it was night, and then they lost theyr companye, and so returned. Thus going in his course, he beganne to comfort those Nayres which were delyuered vnto him for pleasures, with manye pleasaunt tales, the which was the cause that they fell to theyr meate, being three dayes there, e had eaten nothing of fiue daies of theyr sailing, and vpon the xb. of Januarie, he came within sight of Cananor, which lyeth flat north from Cochin, and is in the coast of Malabar, xxxi. leagues from Cochin.

The discription of the towne of Cananor.

Cananor is a greate citie, consisting of houses made of Earth, and couered ouer with bandes stone or slate: there are in this Citie many Moores that are great merchants, which trade in all kinds of merchandise. There is adioyning vnto this Citie a goodly Baie, but there is in this Coast no great store of Pepper, no more then doth growe in their owne turnes. Howbeit they haue greate store of Ginger, Cardamomon, Tamarindos, Mirabolanes, Cassiafistola, and such lyke. There belong vnto this Citie certeine poles of water, wherin there do breed Lagartos, the which are lyke vnto the Crocodiles that are in the riuer of Nilo, which are so great that they doe eate men, if so be that they maye come by them. Their heades are great, and they haue two ordeys of teeth, their breath is as sweet as muske, and their bodies are couered ouer with shels. Also about this citie there are in bushes great adders, which are very full of poison, so that with their breath onely they do kill men: also there are Bats so great as kites, which in their heads doe seeme much like vnto a Fore, hauing such manner of teeth also.

Drugs for the Pothecaries.

Digitized by Google

Theſe the Gentiles doe feede vpon, for that they are pleaſant and ſweete. They haue moreouer in this Citie plentie both of fiſh, flesh, & fruits, & as for rice ỹ commeth vnto thē from other places. The king is a Gentile, and a Bramene, hee is counted to be one of the three of the prouince of Malabar, but he is not ſo rich nor of ſo great a power as is the king of Calycut, nor yet as the king of Coulan. Vnto this harbour arriued the Captaine Generall, and came to an anker, (not onelye for that the king had requeſted him ſo to doe) but alſo for that he minded to take in there ſome Cinnamon, whereof hee had none yet a boorde, ſo that there hee toke in 400. Quintalls, and might haue had much more, but he would not take it, wherefore it was thought that he wanted money: whereupon the king toke occaſion to ſend him word, that if ſo be the lacke of money were the cauſe that he toke no more thereof, or any other ſpices, hee was then much to blame, for that hee would truſt him with much more if neede ſo required, vntill hee returned backe againe, hee or any other. Hee was the willinger to ſend him this offer, for that he knewe the true dealing of the Portingales, and howe well they mainteined their promiſe: and for that hee did beare vs ſo greate good will, the Captaine Generall made him anſwere, giuing him greate good thankes for the liberall offers hee hadde made him: promiſing that if hee liued, hee woulde enforme the king his maiſter of the greate good will that hee doth beare him. And once this, hee maye bee aſſured to haue him alwayes for his friende. After this was deliuered vnto him an Embaſſadour, whome the king of Cahanor ſent to the king of Portingale, to increaſe a further friendſhip betweene them.

Euery quintall is 100. weight.

What

What had chaunced to the Captaine generall vntill such time that hee arriued at Monsanbique, and from thence to Lisbborne, and how Sancho de Toar, did discouer the Ilande of Sofala.

Chap. 41.

IN the middes of that goulfe, and on the last day of January, he toke a great ship, richly laden with Merchandise, and perceiuing that it belonged to the King of Cambaya, he would not meddle therewith, but rather sent him word that his comming to the Indias was not to make warres with any, but if so be that he minded so to doe, it shall be with the King of Calycut, for that he had broken the peace he had made with him: onely out of that ship he toke a Pilot, for to safeconduct him, till he had past the gulfe. And he being in the same vnder saile, on a certaine night, which was the xii. of February, they lost the ship of Sancho de Toar, which in a storme, that rose sodainly vpon them, being hard by the shore side, violently they ranne vpon it, by meanes whereof, there was kindled in the same a great fire, so that nothing was saued, but onely the men. Following their course in this tempest, they past by Mylynde, onely for that they could not take harbor there, nor on any other land but only Monsanbique, which he toke in his waye, as well for the want they had of water, as also to new rig their ships, for they went all open.

A ship of the fleete cast away

In the meane while he sent Sancho de Toar, to discouer Sofala, and from thence to returne towards Portingale, with relation thereof. The shippes being all in a readinesse, they returned towards the Cape Bona esperansa, and ther by reason of another great storme, that ouertoke them, there was shot out of a ship a great peece of Ordinaunce, which ship was neuer seene after in all that voyage. After so many great and cruell stormes, and other great daungers, which are innumerable to write of, he past the forelaid Cape, the xvii. of May, which fell on Whitsundaye,

Digitized by Google

and so following their course, came to an Anker at Cabo Verde, where he found Diego Dias (whose company he had lost before, when as he went toward the Indias) who was driuen into the red Sea, where he did winter, and lost his boate, and where also dyed the most part of his men, and for that his Pilot durst not venture to carry them to the Indias, did return toward Portingale. And so after that he came out of the red Sea, what with hunger, thirst, and other diseases, all his men were consumed sauing seauen persons: wherein God of his great godnesse shewed a miracle, for so much as in many dayes before, they were not able to gouerne their sailes, for that they were so feeble and weake.

Diego Dias found at Capo Verde, & his voyage.

The Captain generall seeing that ther came no more ships, departed towards Lisborne, whereunto he came the last daye of July in the yeare of our Lord 1501. And after that he was arrined, in came the ship, which shot off the piece of Ordinaunce in the storme, before that he doubled the Cape Buena esperanza, and after him came also Sancho de Toar, who went to discouer Sofala, and made relation thereof to be a small Iland, standing hard to the firme lande, and that it was inhabited by blacke men, which are called Cafres, and that out of the firme lande there commeth much golde, where as they say, there are mynes thereof. And for that cause there goe out of the Indias thether many Portes, that traffike the same in trucke of Merchandize of small value. Moreouer he brought with him a Porte, which was giuen him in paiune of one of his men, which he sent into ỹ firme land for to view the same. This Porte gaue large information thereof, as hereafter I shall declare. With this last ship there did returne vnto Portingale, of twelue that went for the Indias, onely fiue: the other sue were lost.

The Iland of Sofala discouered.

¶ How Iohn de la Nueua, went for Captaine generall of the third Fleet, that was sent to the Indias, & what he did after his arriuall there, & how he from thence he returned toward Portingale.

Chap. 42.

Digitized by Google

IN this yeare of our Lord 1501. the King of Portingale supposing that all contention and strife in Calycut was finished, & that ỹ trade was setled as well there as in Quiloa and Sofala, and for that he had sent the selfe same yeare for that purpose one Pedro Aluares: therefore he thought best not to send any more then 13. ships & a Carueli, of ỹ which two carried Merchandize to Sofala, & the other two to Calycut. Of this Fleete he made Generall one called Ioan de la Nueua, borne in Galyzia, & this charge was giuen him, for ỹ he was accõpted to be a valyant Gentleman: moreouer, Francisco de Nauoys, Diego Barbosa, & Hernando de la pyna, were appointed for his captaines. Their went in this Fleet no more then 1111. men. That which the king had giuen him in commandement to do, was this, that in his way he should touch at the Ilande of S. Blaze. And being come thether, if it should so chaunce, that he should finde nine ships of his ships, that there he should there remaine ten dayes, and from thence he should depart toward Sofala; and being there, if so be that ther were setled a Factorie, to discharge the Merchandize the which were appointed for that place. From the which he might haue returne into the Indias. And if so be that he found not all thing so, that then he should trauell with all diligence, and as much as in him lay, to settle the same before he should goe from thence: which being finished, that then he should leaue for Factor of that place Aluoro de Braga, with all such Merchandize as ther appointed, which went in the Carueli. From thence he should go for Quiloa, & after ỹ he had bene there, he should keepe his right course toward Calycut. And if so bee that he should finde ther as yet Pedro Aluares, to know whether he stand in any need of him, & that he should obey him as his generall, & wil him to settle a factory in Sofala, if it were not done already. This generall being departed frõ Lisbon, he came safely to ỹ Ilande of S. Blaze, wher in a branch of a tree was fõud a shoe, & in ỹ same was a letter, which made mention, ỹ Pedro de Tayde captain of ỹ fleet of Pedro Aluares

The third Fleet that went frõ Portingal to the Indias

The order that the king gaue him concerning this voyage.

Digitized by Google

res Cabral, which was bound to Portingale was paſt by, and ſo making further relation what had chanced vnto him in Calycut, and of the good entertainment they had in Coching, where as then did remaine ſome of our men, and alſo how the King of Cananor ſhewed himſelfe very curteous. This as it appeared, was written by Pedro de Tayde, to aduertiſe all ſuch Captaines as ſhould paſſe by to Calycut. The Captaine generall with the other Captaines peruſing this letter, did then determine, yᵗ it was not requiſit, to leaue the Carnell in Sofala, for that they had but few men, which was not aboue foure score. And with this they thought it conuenient to go to Quiloa, where they founde a baniſhed man, whom Pedro Aluares had left there, who likewiſe informed the Generall, what Pedro Aluares had paſt in Calicut, the which he had learned of certaine Moores, and alſo of the ſhips that he had loſt. From thence he went to Mylinde, where he talked with the King, which tolde him as much more as the baniſhed man had done. And hauing the ſame for certaine, he went ouer to the Coaſt of the Indias, to the which he came in November, and fell to an Ankor in Anchadiua, where he thought conuenient to take in his water. And being there arriued, there came in vpon a ſodaine, ſeauen great ſhippes of Cambaya, which were bounde into the ſtraights. The Moores would haue fought with our ſhippes, but our ordinance was the cauſe that they durſt not laye vs aboord, and ſo they went their way. After this, the Captaine generall departed to Cananor: where he talked with the King, which certified him of that which had likewiſe paſt in Calycut with Pedro Aluares, and what he had done, and how he offered him lading for thoſe ſhips which he had brought with him. Alſo he certified him, how deſirous he was to be at the King of Portingales commaundement: yet for all theſe faire words, the Captaine generall would not take in there any lading, vntill ſuch time he had ben at Coching with the Factor, toward which place he departed, and in his way he toke a ſhip which appertained vnto ỹ Moores of Calycut, the which defended hir ſelfe very valyauntlye; but

they take their voyage to the Indias.

Digitized by Google

bdi afterward he commaunded to set the same a fire. And being arriued at Cochin, the Factor with the rest of his cõpany went to visite the Captaine generall aboorde his ship, who told him that the king was greatly offended with Pedro Aluares, for ỳ he went his way without speking with him, & soe carrying away his pledges: yet this notwithstanding, both he & the rest of his company wer alwayes curteously entertained. In ỳ night they wer brought into his pallaice, ỳ there they might remaine: & if so be ỳ in ỳ day they wer any thing desirous to walk abroad, then they wer tended vpon by certain of his Nayres, which were commanded to attend vpon them, & kepe them company for feare of the Moores, for that they did not loue them, but rather were desirous to kill them, insomuch, that before they went to the Pallaice, they did one night set fire to the house, wherein they did lye: whereof the king hauing knowledge, from thence forth he had them to his Pallaice, and so commaunded from that time forwarde the Nayres to take a care of them. Moreouer, he was told what ill sales he shoulde finde there of such Merchaundize as he had brought, for that the Moores had perswaded the Merchaunts of the Countrey to giue lytle for the same: and also aduised those that sell the Pepper and other Spices, that they should not sell the same but for readymoney, and not in truckp of Merchaundize: & therefore they told him that if so be he had brought no money to buye their Spices withall, that then he shoulo make no reckoning of the same. And therefore for that the Generall had brought none, he would carrie there no longer, but returned to Canonor, to take in there his lading, where the king was so great a friend to the king of Portugale, that when he vnderstood that he had brought no money, he remained his suretie for a thousand Quintall of Pepper, & for fiftie of Ginger, & for foure hundred & fiftie Quintall of Cinamon besides some linnen cloath, which is made of Algadon, vntill such time he had made sales of all such Merchandize as he had brought with him, which he had lefte in Cananor, in the handes of a Factor & two or thre of his, and so

The malitiousnesse of the Moores.

Euerye Quintall is a 100. vvaight.

&c. from

Digitized by Google

from thence he ſhould returne with the firſt winde, ẏ which as then did begin to blow, and therefore he would tarry no longer. To the intent therefore they ſhuld not depart without their lading, he ſhewed the Captaine generall this pleaſure. The Captaine generall ſeeing this his curteous dealing, did commend vnto his cuſtodie certaine of his men, the which he left with him, for that he had ſent with Pedro Aluares Cabral Emballadors to Portingale. This lading being taken in, then on the xv. of December, ther did appeare in the Sea lxxx. Paraos, which were paſt the Mount Dely. Whereof the king hauing knowledge, he ſent word immediately to the Captaine generall, that thoſe were the Fleete of Calycut, that came onely to ſet vpon him, and therefore it were good he ſhuld command his men to diſimbark themſelues & their ordinance: vnto which ẏ captain generall made anſwere, that he would not ſo doe. For if ſo be that the enimies came with that intent, he had a hope in God ẏ he ſhould be able to defend himſelfe: and with that he put himſelfe in a readineſſe. The next day following, which was the xvi. day of December, before ẏ dawning of ẏ day, ther was come into the Bay to the number of 100. ſhips and Paraos, which wer all full of Mores, being ſent of purpoſe, for that the king of Calicut was informed, that they were there taking in of their lading, ſo that he thought by that meanes that neither ſhip nor man ſhould eſcape, and therefore they lay as they did about the Baye. As ſoone as the Captaine generall had viewed them, he remoued from the place wher he was at an Ankor, and brought himſelfe into the middes of the Baye, leaning order with his ſhips, that they ſhould lay on load with their ordinaunce which they had, with the which he commaunded them forthwith to begin to ſhot off: which was done in ſuch ſort, that they did neuer ceaſe. And if ſo be that he had not done ſo, doubtleſſe the enimies wold haue laid their ſhips aboord, by reaſon there were ſo many: So that it was impoſſible for him to eſcape, if God of his goodneſſe had not fauoured him, and prouided by his mercie, that the enimies brought no Ordinaunce with them.

The king of Calicut ſent lxxx. Paraos to fight with ẏ captain Generall

Where-

Digitized by Google

Wherefore they were the bolder to dispend amongst them their shot, with the which there were many very sore hurt, ouer and besides great numbers that were slaine, and their ships and Paraos sunke, for they durst not venter to lay our ships aboord, nor yet had killed or hurt any of our men. The fight dured vntill such time it was Sunne set, then the enimies helde vp a flagge. But, for that he feared they meant thereby some deceipt, he did not leaue off shoting: for otherwise they might haue thought he had so done, for ỳ he was wearied, or els for feare. But it was nothing so, for they did it for the desire they had of peace, in respect of the hurt and losse of their men, which they had receiued at our mens hands, whereby they were driuen to such necessitie, that if so be that the winde had serued, they had hoysed vp theyr sayles and gone theyr way, and therefore they kept vp their flagge. The Captaine generall perceiuing their meaning, (and for that the most part of his Ordinaunce was broken, with the continuall shoting thereof, did answere them with another flagge, which was done by the councell and consent of the other Captaines: and immediately vppon the same, they sent a Moore, which came in a small Boate vnto him, whose message was, to demand peace till the nert day, which was by him graunted, with this condition, that they should tarrie no longer in the Baye, but go into the open Sea, so they did. The generall (although ỳ wind was partly against him) made likewise his course into the Sea, although it wer troublesome vnto him. The Moores could not doe the lyke, for their shippes and Paraos can beare no sayle but with a forewinde. Yet for all the trouble that was past, the Generall came to an Anchor hard by them, and for all that he vsed in the night a great and vigilant watch, by the which they heard the enimies rowing in their boates towardes our Fleete, yet before that they were knowen, they wer almost vpon him: their intent as it was presupposed, was to set our Fleete a fire. The Captaine Generall fearing this, commaunded to vnyere more of the Cabells, that he might bee the farther off from them.

This flag was a signe & request of peace.

&c. if. And

Digitized by Google

And perceiuing that the enimies did yet follow me them, he then commanded a peece to be ſhot of at them, with ꝯ which they were afeard, & ſo went their way: & as ꝯ wind came of the ſhore ſomwhat faire, they hoyſed vp their ſailes, and followed their courſe toward Calicut. The Captaine generall gaue God great thanks, ꝯ he had ſo deliuered him from his enimies, & ſo taking his leaue of the King of Cananor, departed toward Portingale, where he arriued in ſafetie with all his ſhips. After that he was departed, there came to Cananor one of his men, called Gonſallo Pixoto, which was taken in Calicut for Captiue, whome the King ſent with a meſſenger to the Captaine generall. The effect thereof was, excuſing himſelfe of all that was done vnto Pedro Aluares, and further alſo what hurt he had done vnto his Fleete in Cananor. Moreouer, he offered him, if ſo be that he would come to Calycut, to giue him his full lading of Spices, and ſufficient Pledges for the aſſuraunce of the ſame.

they ariue ſafelye at Portingal

¶How Vaſco de la Gama retourned for Captaine generall to the Indias with a Fleete of ſhips, and what hee did till he came to Quiloa. Chap. 43.

The iiii. voyage to the Indias 1502.

The King of Portingale hauing great deſire to reuenge, the iniuries & treaſon that the king of Calicut had done vnto his ſeruants, did therefore cauſe to be made in a readines a great Fleete of ſhips, with the which he did determine to make warres againſt him. And hauing giuen the charge thereof to Pedro Aluares Cabral, did vpon certaine iuſt conſiderations take the ſame from him againe, and in his ſtead appointed for Generall, Don Vaſco de la Gama, who departed from Liſhborne, the third of March, in the yeare of our Lord 1502. and had the charge of thirteene great ſhips and two Carueles, of the which beſides himſelfe went for Captaines Pedro Alonſo de Aquilar, Philipe de caſtro, Don Luys Coſinuo, Franco de Conya, Pedro de Tayde, Vaſco Caruallo, Vincete Sodre, and

Digitized by Google

and Blas Sodre, cousin germaines to the Captaine generall, Gil Heemand, cousin to Laurenco de la Mina, Iuan Lopes Perestrelo, Rodrigo de Castenoda, Rodrigo de Abreo, and of the caruells, Pedro Raphael & Diego Peres. They carryed also a Caruell vnwrought, which they should make an ende of in Monsanbique, of the which there should goe for Captaine one called Hernand Rodrigues Badarsas: besides this they saile ther remained making in readines other fiue ships, of the which there should go for Captains generall, one Steuen de la Gama, who departed the fift day of May, next after following. After that the Captaine generall had doubled the Cape of Buena Esperansa with his whole fleete, being at the furthest end of the currents, he sent the same to Monsanbique, to remaine there whilest he went to Sofala, according as he was commanded by the king. He carried in his companie foure of the smallest shippes of the whole Fleete. His going thether was not onely to se the situation of the same, and to se whether there were any place conuenient there for to make a hut, but also for to regrate their gold, and this was done in two dayes. The frendship betweene the king of Sofala and him, was agreed vpon, and that he might from thence forth settle the factorie there. After that this was ended, there passed betweene them sundrie presents from the one to the other. And hauing concluded, the Captaine generall departed from thence, and returned to Monsanbique, and in going out of the riuer there was lost one of the ships, but the men were all saued. Being arriued at Monsanbique he immediatly renewed with the gouernour the olde friendship which in times past had bene betweene them, and by his consent was left there a factor, which was deliuered vnto him with other more of our men, which remained in the Factorie for no other purpose but to prouide alwaies victualls for such Fleetes as should touch there, either going or comming from the Indias. This being finished, & hauing made an ende of the Caruell with all his ordinance placed, he departed toward Quiloa, with intent to bring

He goeth first to Sofala to regrate their golde.

A house apointed for the Factory.

Digitized by Google

him to be tributarie to the king of Portingale, the order whereof he carryed with him in his Regiſter, which hee meant to put in execution, by reaſon of the euill intertein-ment he gaue to Pedro de Aluares Cabrall. And being come to this harbour or port, the king went to viſit him, a ſeaworde, which hee did onely for the feare that he was in, for the iniurie which he had done to Pedro Aluares. After that he was come thether, there arriued alſo Steuen de la Gama, that came with other fiue ſhips, which he departed withall out of Portingale. Now when the Captaine Ge-nerall eſteemed the king but for a lyar, and had got him a ſeaworde, he would not truſt him on his promiſe any fur-ther, but did immediatly threaten him, that if ſo be that hee would not pay tribute to the king of Portingale, he would commaund him to priſon, vnder the hatches of his ſhippe. With the feare hereof, he promiſed to giue him yeerely fiue thouſand Miticaes of gold, and for the aſſurance of the pai-ment thereof, he gaue in pledge a principall Moore, whome they doe call Mafamede Aleones, one whome he hated, for that he was a feard leaſt he wold take the kingdome from him, for that he himſelfe hadde vſurped the ſame from the right king. After that he ſaiue himſelfe at libertie, and in the ritie, he woulde not according to his promiſe ſend his tribute, but rather hoped that the Captaine Generall wold haue cauſed the pleadge to be killed, by reaſon whereof he ſhould be ridde of an enimie. But the Moore, ſeeing that the tribute came not, was faine to pay the ſame himſelfe, and therevpon the Captaine Generall did deliuer him.

How the Captaine Generall did take a ſhip of the Moores of Meca, at the mount Dely, & what chaunced vnto him thereby. chap. 44.

THis being done, the Captaine Generall, went for-ward on his voyage, toward Mylynde, where hee ſtaide to take in his water, and to ſee the king: and from

Digitized by Google

from thence he kepte his course towarde the Indias, and at the mount Dely, he met with a ship of the Moores of Meca, that was bound to Calycut, which was taken by our men, for that they did defende themselues verie stoutlye.

A ship of the Moores of Meca taken.

The shippe beeing rendered, the Captaine Generall went a boorde the same, where he commaunded to come before him the owners thereof, and all the principallest Moores that were more there. He willed them also to bring with them all such kinde of merchaundise as they had, threatening them that if they did it not, he woulde cause them to be throwen into the sea. They aunswered him that they had nothing, for that all theyr goods were in Calycut. The Captaine Generall shewed himselfe to bee offended with that aunswere, and did therefore commaunde one of them to be throwne into the sea, bound hand and foot. The others with the feare they had conceiued to see this punishment, did deliuer all that they had, which was much, and that verye good merchaundise, which was immediatly commaunded to be deliuered vnto Diego Hernando Correa, that went for Factor to Coching, and so he gaue order that the same should be carryed a boorde another shippe.

All the children which were a boorde the sayde shippe, were carryed aboorde the Generall, for that he had made promise to make them all Friers, and to place them in our Ladyes Church of Belem, as afterwarde he did.

The rest of the merchaundise which were of the meaner sorte, and of small valtie, hee gaue the spoyle of them to his men. The shippe beeing vnladen of the goods, commaundement was giuen to Steuen de la Gama, to set the same a fire. This was done after that the Moores were driuen vnder the Hatches, to reuenge the death of those that were slaine in Calycut.

This shippe beeing sette a fire, by the foresayde Steuen de la Gama, and other two, they leaped into their Boates, leauing the shippe burning. The Moores that were within the same, after that they perceyued the

Digitized by Google

the shippe to burne, did breake open the hatches: by meanes whereof they were set at liberties: and with the water the ship had within it did quench the fire. The Captaine Generall seing this, forthwith commaunded Steuen de la Gama to goe once more, and laye the same aborde, to the which he went with sundry of his men, with their weapons.

Desperate minds in time of extremitie.

Howbeit the Moores did defende themselues as desperate men, not fearing death. Some there were of them that toke firebrands and threw the same into one of the shippes, with determination to set the same a fire. Others threw the like at their heades. And for that the night drew on, they left them there, because the Captaine Generall was not of that minde they should remaine there in the darke, for feare least the Moores should kill some of our men. Howbeit he gaue commaundement, that the foresaid shippe shoulde be watched, that the Moores shoulde not runne to lande, which was hard by. The Moores all that night did nothing else, but crie out to Mahoma to succour and deliuer them from vs. The dawning of the day being came, the Captaine Generall commaunded once more that Steuen de la Gama with some of the Marriners of his shippe, should goe and lay the Moores ship a boord, and set the same a fire againe, which was so done. Now after that he hadde made the Moores to flie, and to ioyne themselues in the poope of their ship, fighting alwaies with them, notwithstanding the which, certeine of his Marriners and Gunners would not leaue them vntill such time the ship was halfe burnt. When the Moores saw the fire, some there were that leaped into the sea with hatchets in their handes, which they carried swimming, with determination to kill all those that did pursue them with boats. Whom like wilde men desperately bent they did set vpon. Yet for all that there were many that were hurt, for that they came neere to our boates side. Howbeit the most parte of them was slaine, and those that remained in the shippe were drowned within the same, for that the ship did sinke. There were of them in all three hundred, whereof there was not

one

Digitized by Google

one that did escape: and of our men there were some that were hurt.

How the Captaine Generall made peace and friendship with the king of Cananor, and afterwarde departed toward Calycut. Chap. 45.

From hence went the Captaine Generall to Cananor, and being come thether to an ankor, he sent ỳ Embassador which he brought with him for the king, who told him that he was come, and that his desire was to speake with him. The king hereupon commaunded to be made a bridge of timber, which entered into the water as farre as it was possible. The same was couered ouer with Carpets, and other rich clothes, and vpon it toward the lande side, was framed a house lykewise made of timber, couered ouer as the bridge afore sayd, which was made for the meeting of the king and the Captaine Generall. The king being the first that was come, came accompanyed with ten thousand Nayres, and with many Trumpets, and other instrumentes, which went sounding and playeng before him. After that the king was entered into this house, there were placed the Nayres on the Bridge, those that were appointed to receiue the Captaine Generall. Who standing there, anone came the Generall in his Boate accompanied with all the Boates of the fleete, being richly couered ouer and set out with theyr Flagges, besides that, they carryed certeine Ordinaunce in the prore of theyr Boates. Also there were many Drummes and Trumpets with them, and with shoting of the Ordinaunce the Captaine Generall distinguished himselfe, being accompanied with all his Captaines, and with sundry of his men, which went all armed.

An embassadour sent to ỳ king of Cananor.

The meeting of ỳ king and the Captaine Generall at Cananor 1502.

Do. The

Digitized by Google

ſaft in his port or harboure, by [which he feared to receiue. There were carried before him two great Baſons of ſiluer and gilt, which were to waſh his hands in, couered ouer with fine peeces of Coꝛall, and other fine things which they doe greatly eſteeme in the Indias. The Nayres viewing the ſame, did meruaile to ſee the delicatneſſe of our men.

The preſet vvhich the king of Portingale ſent ỹ king of Cananor.

With this the king came as farre forth to receiue the captaine generall as the gate of his place, where he imbraced him, and afterwarde they returned together to the place from whence the king came forth, where the Captaine generall had commaunded to be ſet a couple of chaires, vpon the which, although it was not the kings cuſtome to ſit, yet he did at that time for the Captaine Generalls ſake. At this preſent was concluded the friendſhip betweene the king of Portingale and him, ſo that immediatly after that the Factorie was ſetled in Coching, minding to doe the lyke in Cananor, where as ſoone as the ſame was done, he wold lade certeine of his ſhippes, and after all this the Captaine Generall departed toward Calycut.

How the Captaine Generall came to the port of Calycut, and what hee did there. Chap. 46.

From hence the Captaine Generall being come to the harbour of Calycut, afore they were knowne, did take certaine Paraos in the which were to the number of fiftye Malabars, that could not eſcape. The Captaine Generall would not at the firſt comming doe the citie any hurt with his ordinaunce, vntill ſuch time he hadde ſeene whether the king woulde ſend him

Digitized by Google

him any messenger or not. And tarrieng for the same, there came a borde him, a boate with a Flag in the same, in the which there was a Frier of the order of Saint Frances, whome after that our men had sight of him, they iudged to be one of those that were in the company of Aries Correa, & remained captiue. This frier being entred into the ship, said Deo gracias, by the same he was knowne to be a Moore, howbeit to excuse himselfe he said that he came after that sort, that they might the rather consent vnto his comming a borde, being sent with a message from the king to the Captaine Generall, about the setteling of a trade in Calicut. Vnto this the Captaine generall made aunswere, commaunding him not to speake thereof, vntill such time the king had satisfied him for all that he had taken in the Factory, when he consented to the death of Aries Correa, and the others that were with him. In this matter they spent three daies with messages to & fro, without anye conclusion, for that the Moores did withstande the same.

The Captaine general perceiuing y all these delaies were but lies to spend the time, he sent him then word that hee minded not to tarrie for answere any longer then nowne, & the same to be with effect, and to complie with him, or else he would make him most cruell warre, with fire & sword, and that forthwith he wold begin it vpon such his subiects as he had taken prisoners. And because the king should not thinke them to be words onely, he commaunded to bring him a running glasse of an houre, and thereuppon he tolde the Moore that went with the message, that of those Glasses there should runne so many, and as sone as they were ended, without any further delay he would commaund all that to be done, which he had sent him word off. But all this could not moue the king to performe anye thing that he had promised, he was so inconstant and giuen to change, with euerye vaine saieng of the Moores: and the outward shew that hee made of peace, was but feigned, by reason of the feare hee had conceiued in himselfe, to see so greate a fleet in his port or harbour, by the which he feared to receiue

The Moores make him keepe no promise vvith the Capteine Generall, nor feare his povver

Digitized by Google

great loſſe, whereof the Moꝛes did aſſure him the contra-
rye, which was the occaſion that he kepte no pꝛomiſe.
Upon this the Captaine generall as ſoone as the time was
come, commaunded to bée ſhotte off a péece, which was the
ſigne he gaue to the other Captaines, to commaund thoſe
Malabars to bée hanged, which were departed amongſt the
Fléete. After that they were executed, he commaunded
their féete and handes to bée cut off, which were thꝛowne
into a Parao and ſent a ſhoare with two Boates well ar-
med, and a Letter foꝛ the king of Calycut wꝛitten in the
Arabian tongue, in ỹ which hée ſignified vnto him ỹ in ſuch
maner, he would paye him foꝛ all his faigned lyes which
he had ſpoken vnto this pꝛeſent. And as foꝛ his kinges
goods, which he did deteine in his hands, he woulde reco-
uer them a hundꝛed folde. After all this, he gaue comman-
dement, that in the night there ſhuld be bꝛought thꝛée ſhips
as néere to the ſhoare as they could, that the nert day with-
out ceaſing there ſhould be ſhot all the great Oꝛdinaunce
that they had at the Citie, with the which there was great
hurt done, beſides the kings houſe which was ouerthꝛown
therewith, and ſundꝛie other houſes of the pꝛincipall inha-
bitaunts. This being done, he departed towarde Cochíng,
leauing to kéepe that Coaſt fiue ſhippes which were well
appointed, of the which was named foꝛ Captaine Gene-
rall one called Vincente Sodre, to remaine with them in
the Indias, that therewith he might goe and diſcouer the
ſtraights of Meca, and the coaſt of Cambaia.

How the Captaine Generall came to Cochíng, and what he did there, & alſo how the king of Calycut ſent to traine him thether, for that there hee would traiterouſly haue taken him, and laſt of all he wrote a Letter to the king of Cochíng. Chap. 47.

he

Digitized by Google

The Captaine generall being come to the Port or Harbour of Cóching, when ỹ king had notice thereof, hée sent him before hée came a land, certaine Pleadges to remaine in the ship for his assurance. And afterward he came in person and met him. In this visitation the King did delyuer vnto him Steuen Gyl, with all the others that remained in his Countrey, and in recompence of that, the Captaine generall deliuered him a letter, which the King of Portingale had sent him, rendring vnto him most hartie thankes, for the good will he alwaies shewed to Pedro Aluares Cabral: and that he was well pleased and contented, to haue a Factory setteled in Cóching. Also there was deliuered vnto him a Present, which ỹ King his Master had sent him: which was a rich Crowne of gold, full of Jewells, a Cholar of golde all inameld, two Fountaines of siluer wrought, two Arras clothes of Imagery worke, a costly Paulion, a peece of crimson Satten, and another of Sendall, all which ỹ King did receiue with great pleasure. And for ỹ he vnderstood not wherefore euery of these things serued, he requested to be informed of the same. And therefore the Captaine generall commaunded the Paulion or Tent to be armed, in the which was concluded a further peace. Also hé gaue him a house to settle therein the Factorie. Moreouer, the price was agréed vpon, how he would deliuer the Spices & Drugs that were gathered in his country: of all these things ther was a contract made & set down, which was confirmed by the King. And for a further assurance therof, the King of Cóching, sent to the King of Portingale a Present, which was two Bracelets of golde, set with stones, a towell which the Mores doe vse of cloath of siluer, which was two yeards & a halfe of length, two great peeces of linnen Cloth, which they doe call Bengala, made of Cotten woll, which was excellent fine, a stone of the bignes of a walnut, which they doe take out of the head of a beast: they call the same in the Indias, Bulgoldolf, of the which

The king of Portingales present sét to the king of Cóching.

The king of Cóchings present sét to the king of Portingale.

Digitized by Google

there are but few found, and theſe are good againſt all poyſon. The houſe in the which they determined to ſettle their Factorie being graunted, poſſeſſion thereof was immediately taken by Diego Hernandus, and other two which were Notaries: the one was called Lorenſo Moreno, & the other Aluaro was with others. Whiles the Captaine generalls ſhip was taking in of his lading, there came a meſſenger from the King of Calycut vnto him, ſaieng: that if ſo bee that he would retourne to Calycut, he woulde reſtore vnto him all that had bene taken from him, and that he ſhoulde ſettle a Trade there. The Captaine generall, after that hee had conſidered vpon the meſſage, commaunded the meſſenger to priſon, for this intent, to reuenge himſelfe on him, if ſo be that the King did lye, ſince he had ſo oftentimes deceiued him. And being now determined to goe towarde Calycut, which was more to ſee whether that he coulde recouer the Merchaundize that were taken, then for anye hope hee had of the Kings friendſhip, would for that cauſe go alone, leauing behinde him for his Lieuetenaunt, Steuen de la Gama. The Captaines that remained were ſore againſt his going alone, and eſpecially after that ſort, for feare of miſchaunce: yet he would not be perſwaded but to goe, ſaieng that along that Coaſt there was Vincente Sodre with the other ſhips, that were appointed to remaine in the Indias: and if ſo be that he were driuen to any neceſſitie, hee would ioyne with them. As ſoone as the King was informed that he was come to Calycut, he ſent him immediatly word, that the nert day he would comply with him for all ſuch goods, as had bene taken from Pedro Aluares, and afterwarde hee would renue the Trade, and ſettle the Factorie. But contrarie to theſe his wordes, as ſoone as he had knowledge that the Captaine generall was come alone, vpon a ſodayne he commaunded to be made in a readineſſe xxiiii. Paraos, with intent to ſet vpon him, & ſo to take him if it were poſſible. And indeed with ſuch a ſodaine came vpon him, that to eſcape them, he was fain to cut one of his Cables, which he had out, and ſo made ſaile. And as the winde was of the land,

This meſſeger was one of his chief chaplaines.

Digitized by Google

land, he went somewhat further off from those Paraos, yet for all that they did not giue him ouer, but alwaies followed him with such a vehemencie, that hadde it not bene for Vincente Sodre and the others which kept along ỳ Coast, he had bene taken, but yet at length they were faine to run their way. Being thus escaped, he retourned to Coching, & as sone as he came thether he commanded the messenger to be hanged, whom the King of Calycut had sent vnto him: for the which déed hée remained greatly afrighted, when the same came to his knowledge. But seeing now that by no meanes he could take him, he determined then to proue, whether he could perswade the King of Coching to giue him no lading, and also not to consent to any Factory for him in his Countrey.

How the Moores were the principall doers heerein, that mooued the King to write concerning that matter by one of his Chaplaines to the King of Coching after this manner.

The king of Calycuts letter to ỳ king of Coching

I Doe vnderstand that thou fauourest Christians, and that thou hast receiued them into thy Citie, & there dost giue them both lading & victualls. It is possible thou dost not foresée what danger may insue therof, & also how much thou dost displesure me. I do request thée ỳ thou remember what great friends we haue ben till this present, & now thou dost procure my displeasure, in especiall for so small a matter, as is ỳ maintaining of those Christians, which are théeues, ỳ accustome to rob in other mens Countries. From henceforth my request is, ỳ thou do not receiue them, neither yet giue them spices: in the which thou shalt not onely shew me pleasure, but also binde me to requit thy good will in what thou shalt command. I wil not now further request ỳ same, for I beléeue thou wilt do it without further intretie, as I wold for thée in any matter of importance. This letter being perused by the king of Coching, who was honest & true in al his delings, he was not moued there-

Digitized by Google

therewith, but aunſwered the King of Calycut, after this ſort.

The aunſwere of the king of Coching to the king of Calycuts letter

I Cannot well tell how it can be done, being a matter of ſo great a waight, as is to put out of my Citie thoſe Chriſtians, hauing receiued them vpon my word: and to do it ſo eaſily as thou dooſt write. I will neuer requeſt thee of anye ſuch matter, at the deſire of the Moores of Meca, neither yet vpon the inſtaunce of no other Merchauntes, that are Traders to Calycut. In receiuing theſe Chriſtians, and giuing them lading for their ſhips, I do beleeue that neither to thee nor any other, I doe offende: ſince that it is a cuſtome we haue amongſt vs, to ſell our Merchandize to thoſe that will buy them, and to fauour thoſe Merchaunts, which doe reſort vnto our Countrey. Theſe Chriſtians came to ſeeke me out farre off, and for that cauſe I did receiue them, & promiſed to defend them. They are no theeues as thou doſt tearme them, for they bring great ſums of money, in golde and ſiluer, and Merchaundize, wherewith they do trade. Their friendſhip I doe and will obſerue, doing therein but my dutie, and ſo oughteſt thou to doe, and otherwiſe I will not take thee to be my friend: neither yet oughteſt thou or any other be agreeued or offended withall, for that which I doe, is to inrich my Citie.

With this aunſwere the King of Calycut was ſore offended: whereby hee toke occaſion to write this letter following.

The reply to the king of Cochings letter.

IT grieueth me very much, the hatred or enuie thou haſt conceiued againſt me, for that thereby I do perceiue thou wilt leaue my friendſhippe for thoſe Chriſtians ſake, which I take for my great enimies, & ought to be the cauſe that thou ſhouldeſt accept them after the ſame ſort. Once more therefore I doe returne to deſire thee, that thou wilt neither receiue them, nor yet giue them their lading for their ſhips. For if ſo be thou wilt not be perſwaded, to the contrary, but rather meaneſt to proſecute thyne intent, then

I

Digitized by Google

I take God to my Judge, and from henceforth I doe pro- „
teſt, that I am not in fault of the damage that will growe „
vnto thee thereof. „

The King of Coching hauing receiued this letter, laugh- „
ed at it, saiyng to his Chaplaine that was the bringer ther- „
of, that he would doe nothing for feare, but that which hee „
minded to doe, should be vpon request, and so anſwered to „
this letter.

I Haue ſeene thy meſſage, which ſoundeth as it were threa- The king
tenyngly. God who alwaies iuſtifieth pride, doth fauour him of Co-
that hath ſtiffe & ſquicie ey his foe. Sithes thou art my chings an-
friend, do not requeſt me to act abhominable and vnlawfull ſwere to
requeſt, as is to be treaſon, eſpecially amongſt Kings, and the reply.
if there be any other thing that grieueth thee, and is not „
hurtfull to mine honour, I will doe it, yea, although it ſeer „
to my doſe, which I doe not eſteeme in compariſon of mine „
honour. I doubt not that thou will take this anſwere in „
good part, and preuent the death of men, and the deſtruction „
of thy Countrey. But if it be notwithſtanding, thou will „
maintaine thine opinion, God doth well knowe I perceiue „
that herein I am in no fault.

The King of Calycut perceiuing that the King of Co-
ching, was ſtand ſo much vpon his reputation, and would not
doe that which he had requeſted him, did then determine,
(the Captain generall being once departing) to ſet vpon him
by the boye, and vtterly to deſtroy him, againſt whome he
commaunded to be made in a readines, a Fleet of xxix. great
ſhips, that they might encounter with him vpon the Sea, at
his departure toward Portingale, ſuppoſing, that forasmuch
as they went laden, he ſhould be the better able to do them
the more harme.

Of the battaile that was fought betweene the Fleet of Calycut and the Captaine generall, as hee was going toward Cananor: & how Vincente Sodre,

Ee. Pedro-

Digitized by Google

Pedro Raphael, and Diego Pieres tooke two of those ships, & how the Captaine generall departed toward Portingale. Chap. 49.

IF all these letters and messages, the King of Coching would neuer make the Captaine generall priuie, vntill such time that he was ready to depart, and then he tolde him, which before he was loth to doe. And for that he should not conceiue and thinke him to be so vaine as to alter his minde to doe as the King of Calycut would haue him: he did therefore shewe himselfe to be so constant, and such a friend of the king of Portingales, that for his sake he would aduenture to lose his Citie if it were neede. For this the Captaine generall gaue him great thankes, saying, that the King his Master would neuer forget that good will: and in his name he promised to fauour and succour him in such sort, that he should not onely haue his kingdome in great assurance, but also that he would ayde him to conquere others. He willed him also not to feare those Letters that the King of Calicut hadde sent him, for that they were nothing els but to put him in feare, and bring him to be a traitor as he was, being therefore so destroyed, and that from henceforthere there should be made such cruell warre against him, ỹ he should haue inough to doe to defend himselfe, much lesse to make warres against others. All this he tolde him, for the succour of those ships which should remaine in the Indias.

Great friendship and constancie in an heathe Prince.

These words were spoken afore many of his Nayres, of the which the King was verye gladdes that they heard them. And for that we had knowledge that in respect of the friendship that they had with the Moores, they were verye sorye that we had the Factorye graunted in Coching. Therefore the Captaine Generall promised vnto the King that from Cananor he would forthwith sende him thether a Fleete of ships, from whence he was minded to departe.

Now

Now after that he had laden his ten shippes, and was a Sea bourde, three leagues from Pandarane, he had knowledge of the nine and twentie great shippes of the Moores, that went to seeke him out. And assone as he had sight of them, he consulted with his Captaines to fight with them, upon whom with the winde that did begin to blowe, they did beare.

This being agreed upon, the Generall began to beare toward the Enimies. Vincente Sodre, Pedro Raphael, and Diego Peres, for that their shippes were great saylers, went before them all, and these were the first that did giue the onset upon two of the chiefest shippes. Vincente Sodre, fought with the one alone, and Pedro Raphael, and Diego Peres with the other. Their meeting was with such a valyaunt minde, that out of both the Enimyes shippes there leapt many into the Sea. The fight indured no longer, but vntill such time the Captaine generall with the other shippes drewe neere, who did alwayes shote off at them. In the meane while the rest of the Enimies did beare all that they could towarde the shoare. The Captaine generall for feare of the losse of some of his shippes, would not followe, the rather for that they were all laden: Howbeit, our men leapte into their boates, and there fought with those that were swimming in the water, and slewe them all: the which were neere to the number of three hundred persons. A battaile by sea between our ships, and the kings of Calicut

After this the Captaine Generall commaunded to discharge their Shippes, which were taken, in the which was founde store of rich Merchaundize: and amongest the same these peeces following: Fire great Tynages of fine Earth, which they doe call Porcelanas, and the same is verye costlye, as by experience thereof we do see in Portingale: foure great Guyndes of siluer, with certaine perfuming Pannes of siluer: also they there founde, certayne Salons of siluer and gylte, in the which they doe vse to spit. But that which exceeded the rest, was an Idoll of Golde, which weighed thirtie pounde waight, with a mon- A rich price taken from the enimie.

Digitized by Google

monſtrous face and for his eyes he had two very fine Emeraulds: a veſtement of beaten golde, wrought and ſet with fine ſtone, the which veſtement belonged vnto this Idoll, with a Carbuncle or Rubie in his breaſt as bigge as a Croſado, which gaue as great a lyght as if had bene a fire. The ships being ſet a fire, ỳ Captaine generall departed toward Cananor, wher he was with the King, who gaue him a houſe for the Factorie, the poſſeſſion whereof was taken by Gonſallo Gill Barboſa, who was appointed for Factor, and by Sebaſtian Alnares, and Diego Godino, Notaries, and by the Interpretour, called Edwarte Barboſo, and many others, in all to the number of twentie, of all whom the King toke charge vpon him, with all that was in the Factorie: and bound himſelfe to lade from thenceforth all the King of Portingales ſhips of Spices, that they ſhould at any time haue néd of, and this at a certaine price which was immediately named. The Captaine generall did enter into the like bonds in the name of the King of Portingale, to defend him from all thoſe that ſhoulde make him warres for this cauſe. Alſo the King of Cananor did the lyke, and to remaine the King of Cochings friend, and not to helpe nor aide any that ſhould come againſt him, vpon paine that wee ſhould make him warres: and of all this, there were ſufficient, great and lawfull writings made on all parts. After this, the Captain generall ſent Vincente Sodre to go along the Coaſt, and to keepe the ſame vntill Februarie. And if in the meane while there were any newes or knowledge of any lykelihood of warres, betweene the King of Coching & the King of Calycut, that then he ſhoulde Winter there in Coching: but if not, that then he ſhould go to the Straights of the red Sea, to take ſuch ſhips of Meca, as doe paſſe to the Indias.

The order that was giuen to Vincente Sodre, at the departure of the Captaine generall frō Cananor.

This being diſpatched, and thoſe three ſhippes laden with that they ſhould haue, they departed toward Portingale with thirteene ſhippes, the twentith daye of December, in the yeare of our Lord 1503. and ſo arriued with all their ſhips at Manſanbique.

And

Digitized by Google

And for that the ship that Steuen de la Gama went in had a great leake, he commaunded the same to be vnladen and brought a ground, and after that she was newlye rigged, they departed. And within seauen dayes after, there fell a great tempest in the ship y Lewis Cotine was in, & for that it was in such a place that they could not come by it, they were therefore driuen with all the Fleete to retourne to Monsanbique, to new rigge the same. Now the winde was scant, they were faine to remaine in a certeine creeke, vntill she was finished, and afterwarde they retourned to their voyage, and at the Cape of the Correntes they were ouertaken with stormes which came sodeinly, and with such a force vpon them, and that against them, that they were forced to stay there with all the Fleete. The ship that Steuen de la Gama went in did beare vp onely with her fore saile, and his fryt Saile all to torne, by reason wherof he lost the companie of the whole Fleete, and was no more seene. And within fiue dayes after that the Captaine Generall arriued at Lisbborne, hée came in also with her mast broken. This storme being past from this Cape of the Currents, the Captaine Generall followed his course toward Lisbborne, where he arriued the first day of September. All the noble men of the Court went as farre as Calcaes to receiue and accompanie him till he came to the king. He had going before him his Page, which carryed a Mason of siluer, within the same was layde all the tribute which the king of Quiloa had paide. Being come where the king was, his grace honourably receiued him, according as he did deserue, who had done him so great seruice, as it was to discouer the Indias, and to leaue setled Factoryes in Cochin, and in Cananor, which things must needs redound vnto the king to most certeine gaine and profit, besides the great fame and honour which he got therby, in being the first king that had sent to discouer the East partes, whereof he might make conquest, if so be that it pleased him. So in satisfaction the king made him Admerall of the Indias, and also gaue him the title of Lord of Vydegue-

They were dispersed by a tempest

Digitized by Google

ro, which was his owne.

Of the newes that were giuen out in Coching, how the king of Calycut put himſelfe in a readineſſe for the warres, and how Vincente Sodre wold not ſuccour him, but went to the cape of Quardafum. Chap. 50.

As ſoone as the king had knowledge that ỳ Captaine generall was departed toward Portingale, he immediatly determined to put his warres in execution, which he had ſignified to ỳ king of Coching before. And ſo he marched toward the village of Panane, where he beganne to ioyne his power, which was immediatly knowne vnto all thoſe of Coching, for that it was not far off. Wherefore the dwellers there were wonderfully afeard, ſaieng, that they had cauſe ſo to be, for that the king of Coching did all things contrarie to iuſtice and equitie. And ſince he did the ſame vnto thoſe that are of his ſect, and all moſt naturally borne with him, why ſhould he not doe the like vnto the chriſtians which are our enimies? And for that God doth well perceiue the iuſt quarrell the king of Calycut hath to make him warres, that he will therefore aide and ſuccour him therein, vpon the charges of thoſe that are innocents thereof. This they did not onelye tell our men, but alſo in euery place they railed at them, and endeauoured to procure as much hurt as they coulde againſt them.

Both commons & noble mē repine againſt theyr king and our men.

Some of them alſo that were in credite with the king, and ought vs no great good will, did openlye ſaye, that if ſo bee that the king of Calycut did come with a greater power then they hadde, they would immediatlye deliuer

Digitized by Google

ner our men vnto him, since the warres were begunne in respect of vs and for our sakes, they did put in hazarde the losse of their kingdome. The king mervailing much at the boldnesse of his subiects, answered them with loving wordes, saieng that they had offended him verie sore with theyr vaine speach, assuring them, that if so bee that the king of Calycut woulde come and seeke him out, yet hee woulde notwithstanding defende himselfe, onely for that hee well knoweth, that God will favour him, for his iust dealing in defending those christians, as he had taken vpon him to doe. But for all this his subiects coulde not bee well pacified, whereof some were desirous to set vppon our men, but yet they durst not, for that the king had allowed them a gard to attend vppon them, and also appointed a strong place for their lodging. Vpon this, there came newes that Vincente Sodre was come to Coching, who had left greate hurt done along the coast of Calicut, both by water and by land.

Of whose comming all our men were very glad, for that they were before in great daunger. But the Factor perceiving that they came not a land, sent the Captaine generall word by Laurenco Moreno, the certeintie they heard of the warres, which the king of Calycut was minded to make vppon the king of Coching, and where hee was at that present in a readinesse for the same. Requesting him on his behalfe, and requiring him in the name of the king of Portingale, that he woulde forthwith disimbarke himselfe, for that with his beeing in Coching they were certein they should remaine conquerours, yelding sufficient reason for the same, & otherwise that they were in greate daunger. The Generall answered, that he was appointed for Captaine Generall of the Sea, and not of the lande, and did therefore remaine in the Indias, onelye to keepe the seas. The Captain generall excuseth himselfe for dealing on the lande.

Neuertheless if so bee that the king of Calycut had prepared his warres against the king of Coching, by sea, he would have defended him, but since it was by lande, he

Digitized by Google

he had nothing to doe withall, but to ſuffer the king to defend himſelfe, for that he would depart to diſcouer the redde Sea. The Factor vpon this determinate anſwere, did once more ſend vnto him, requiring him on Gods behalfe, and the king of Portingales that he would not leaue them ſo, for that the king of Cochings power was but ſmall to defend himſelfe withall, in theſe warres againſt the king of Calycut, who had begun the ſame onely and for none other cauſe, but to deſtroy our Factorie. And therfore he as Captaine Generall of the king of Portingale, was bound for to defend him, and that this was the principall cauſe why he remained in the Indias. But for all this the Generall would not tarrie, and ſo he departed with the reſt of his Fleet toward the Cape de Quardafum, where he did well knowe that he ſhoulde take fundrye rich prizes. This was that which he did better remember, then to ſtay and defend the king of Cochin or the king of Portingales Factorie.

This generall captaine had other matters of more profit in hand.

How the king of Calicut ſignified vnto his noblemen, & all ſuch as did aſſiſt him, the cauſes why he made this warre againſt the king of Cochin. And how the Prince Nabeadarni was hee, that onely ſpake againſt the ſame. chap. 50.

After that the king of Calycut was come to Panane, thether alſo came preſently fundry noble men his ſubiects and others his friends whome he had ſent for to aide and ſuccour him in this enterpriſe. Others there were that came before they were ſent for: For as ſone they heard that the warres were begun, and that for our ſakes that remained in Cochin (of the which they were all glad) hoping therby to hunt vs out of the Indias, & therfore they came with the better good will to ſeeke the deſtruction of the king of Cochin. There were alſo of his owne ſubiects that arole againſt him, and ſome

of

Digitized by Google

of his nobilitye, as the Caimall of Chirapipill, and he of Cambalane, and also he of the greate Iland which is ouer against Coching, who carryed with them all the power that they were able to make. And being come into the presence of the king of Calicut, he spake vnto them all.

The king of Calicut signifieth the cause vvhy hee beginneth to make these vvarres against the king of Coching.

IF that good workes doe engender friendshippe, amongest men, then I, and you for my sake, and generally all the Malabars ought to beare the same greatly vnto the Portingales, for that it is well knowne, that it is fiue hundred yeare since they came into the Province of Malabar, and in all this time, yea, to this date, there was neuer anie that euer receiued at their handes anye hurt or losse. But hauing no sooner receiued straungers newly come into anye of our Countries, immediatlye we receiue losse by them, whersoeuer they doe beginne to settle their trade. But the Portingales doe trade with the people with all friendshyp, and loue, as ought to doe one naturall neighbour with an other; by whose meanes the Countrey hath beene alwayes well prouided of much victualls and merchandise, which hath beene a cause to enrich our Townes, and that our rents are greatly increased; in especiall within this our Citie. For whilest the Portingales are here resident, they haue made the same the greatest mart Towne that is in all the Indias.

For this cause I am bounde in conscience, and haue greate reason to fauour them, and to mislyke of the Christians which to my greate hinderaunce, yea, and against my good will, would settle in my land, more for to take the same, and to destroye me, then to bring me anye profite or gaines as the Portingales doe, hauing giuen of themselues greate shewes and signes thereof within these few daies, that they were here: as in taking of my Captaine Generall, and my Embassadour prisoners, in making of new lawes in my Citie, to lade their shippes first, and before the Portingales shuld lade. And vpon this they toke an occasion to staye a certeine Shippe of the Portingales, which was the

Digitized by Google

„ cauſe, that the Portes pay as you doe heare, and as I maye
„ iudge by the ſequeale thereof, was ſo ordeined of God for
„ theyr pride, of the which hee was in no fault. Yet this not-
„ withſtanding, they burnt ten of my ſhippes which lay with-
„ in my harboure.

„ After all this, they with theyr Ordinance deſtroyed my
„ Citye, ſo that I was driuen to runne alwaye out of my pal-
„ laice. Not contented with this, they burnt me other two
„ ſhippes, which they woulde not haue done if ſo be that they
„ had come to ſettle a trade. But firſt of all ſince they found
„ themſelues agreeued, they ſhoulde haue come and made
„ theyr complaint to me of the Portes, and tarryed till I had
„ puniſhed them, and not to doe as they haue done, by which
„ it was apparant, that they are theeues and no Merchants,
„ as they name themſelues to be, that vnder this couloure, they
„ might conquere the whole Countrie. Which things the
„ king of Coching would neuer vnderſtand nor giue credit
„ vnto, although I ſent him worde. And being as he is, my
„ ſubiect, & wel vnderſtanding what they had done vnto me,
„ yet he would not but receiue them, & giue them lading for
„ their ſhips, and now he hath giuen them a factorie, I ſen-
„ ding him word and praieng him many times that he wold
„ not conſent thereunto. For this cauſe therfore I haue ſent
„ for you, that you ſhould ioyne your ſelues. And alſo to re-
„ queſt you to tell me your opinions, whether I haue reaſon
„ to reuenge my ſelfe or no?

Heere this enterpriſe vvas vvell liked of. by his no ble men & others

This determination to them all ſeemed verie good, and they praiſed his purpoſed intent, but principally the Lord of Repelyn, forſomuch as hee was a greate enimie to the king of Coching, for that he had vſurped an Iland of his called Arraul: alſo of the ſelfe ſame opinion were other principall Portes. But againſt this his pretended iourney ſpake the kings brother called Nambeadarin, which was the onely heire to the kingdome after the death of his bro-ther; who immediatlye in the preſence of them all ſayde,

The

Digitized by Google

THE kindred that is betweene thee and me, beside sundrie other thinges, may certifie thee that I do desire more thine honour and profit, then anye that bee heere present, and therefore my counsell ought to be of a more efficacie then anye others. For as they are not so greatlye bound to giue thee the same as I am, so as it appeareth they doe fede thy humour, and counsell thee according to thy will, since thou art desirous to accept it, and not according to good reason, which thou hast to leaue it. But if so bee that they without flatterye, and thou without passion, wouldest iudge or weigh the cause of these Christians, thou shouldest finde, that vnto this present time they haue giuen thee no cause, but that they should be well receiued into thy Countrie, and so into all the Prouince of Malabar, and not to hunt them forth lyke theeues, which they cannot bee called, although they were present: And forasmuch as from all the places of the worlde, men doe resorte hether, and assemble themselues to buye those Merchaundise which they haue not in theyr Countryes, and bring those hether which we haue not heere. The answere which the prince made to the foresayde Oration.

In the same sorte come these Christians, and as their comme is of Merchauntes, they brought thee in their Kings behalfe, the richest present that thou diddest yet euer receiue. And besides theyr merchandis they brought much Golde and siluer made in coine, which they doe not vse to bring which come to make warres. And if so bee they hadde come in anye such sorte, they woulde not haue dissimuled the running awaye that the Pleadges offered vnto them whome thou doest call Emballadours, that were kepte in Prison, for that theyr Captaine was a Lande.

But they reconciling themselues vnto thee, went and toke the shippe at thy request in the which was the greate Elephant, and afterward did present thee therwith, and with all that the same ship carried: besides, those that are theeues

Digitized by Google

,, doe not vſe ſo to doe, nor yet paye ſo well, nor vſe ſo much
,, truth as they did, for all the time that they were in Caly-
,, cut, there was none that did complaine of them, but onely
,, the Moores, which they did, for that they are their enimies,
,, and being moued with enuy to ſee them partakers of their
,, profite, did accuſe them that they hadde taken greate ſtore
,, of Pepper from the owners againſt theyr wills, they
,, themſelues being thoſe that vſe the ſame, and for that the
,, Chriſtians ſhoulde not beneſite themſelues by lading of
,, theyr ſhips. And forasmuch as this was ſo apparant, thou
,, gaueſt them licenſe to take theyr fraight, by the which li-
,, cenſe, the Captaine ſent to the ſhippe of the Moores, which
,, was laden, and they being in all the whole fault, did yet
,, notwithſtanding riſe againſt them. Theſe men then haue
,, done as it is well knowne to the world, and yet for all this
,, as quiet men ought to doe, they tarryed all one daye to ſee
,, whether thou woldeſt excuſe thy ſelfe. But they ſeeing that
,, there came none from thee, they did then put in execution
The execution of 3 pledges defended by the kings brother
the reuenge, not traiterouſly as the Moores doe, which went
not to defend the ſhips, although now they ſpeake with a
ſtout ſtomacke, and councell thee to make theſe warres a-
gainſt the king of Coching, for that he did receiue them in-
to his Citie, where no iuſt cauſe is at all. For his receiu-
ing of them, it is not to be iudged that it is to hinder them
,, but he receiued them as he would anye other merchaunt
,, that would haue come to his harbour. After the ſelfe ſame
,, ſort did the king of Cananor, and the king of Coulan deale
,, with them, who would not haue admitted them if they had
,, knowne them to bee theeues. If thou bee minded to baniſh
,, them out of the Indias, and for this cauſe art determined to
,, make warre againſt the king of Coching: it is requiſite
,, alſo thou make warre againſt the king of Cananor, for
,, from thence they may doe that which thou feareſt they will
,, from Coching. But I will not let to tell thee, that thou do-
,, eſt aduenture thy ſelfe againſt him. For that as thou thin-
,, keſt he is of leſſe power then the king of Cananor,

Theſe

Digitized by Google

These words were spoken by Nambeadarin, with such a stomacke and so liberally to the King, that they were by him well taken: In one respect, for that he was a very valyaunt Gentleman, and in another, for that he was with him in great credit and authoritie, And for this cause they bodde him in great reputation: Insomuch, that if the Mores and Caymayles had not shewed themselues very stout against him, the King woulde not haue gone forward with his enterprise to make warres against the King of Coching. Howbeit, they stood vppon their reputation so much, that they thought it would be a great imbasing to their credite, in especially hauing assembled so great a power as the King had done, and not to goe forward, or at the least to do some what afore they did retourne. By meanes whereof, it was possible, that the King of Coching hearing of their comming, would now doe that for feare, which he would not otherwise doe before, being prayed. After all this, the King of Calycut would needes know of his Witches, what daye was good to march forward in with his Armie, who appointed him a fortunate one, and promised him the victory against the King of Coching, and that as yet there would come vnto him more men. With this certainetie, which the Witches had comforted the King withall, which he much trusted vpon, he departed toward the Countrey of Repelyn, which is foure leagues from Coching.

The Mores ouerthrow the credit of ỹ kings brothers Oration.

¶Of the great feare that our men were in, least the King of Coching would haue deliuered them to the King of Calycut. Cap. 52.

IF all this, whatsoeuer hadde past, was the King of Coching aduertised, by sundry espyes which he had in the Campe of ỹ king of Calycut: and therefore he stode some what in feare of him, for that he hadde not sufficient men to defend himselfe, forasmuch as all those that he hoped had fauoured him, were tourned a-

Digitized by Google

gainſt him: yea, euen thoſe that were his owne ſubiectes, whome if he hadde on his ſide, he had bene ſure to haue giuen the king of Calycut the ouerthrow. Therefore, for that he had but fewe men, he was greatly afeard thereof, and the rather, for that of thoſe there, the moſt part ſerued him againſt their will, in eſpecially they that were dwellers in Coching, which did abhorre the very ſight of our men, wherupon they openly ſpake it, that it were good that the king of Coching ſhould deliuer our men to the king of Calycut, or els that he put them out of Coching, and ſo he might acquite himſelfe of theſe warres. Whereſuer, there were many of the inhabitants of Coching, that tanne their wayes, and left their houſes, and all for feare of this warre. Our men alſo on the other parte were greatly afeard to ſee this tumult, which gaue them occaſion to waye the daunger that they wer in, for all that the king did warrant them. Wherfore the Factor fearing the ſucceſſe thereof, procured licenſe of the king to goe to Cananor, hoping that there they ſhould be very quiet, vntill ſuch time the fleete ſhould come from Portingale, thinking that the king by this meanes, ſhould breake vp thoſe warres, that were pretended againſt him, and alſo his Subiectes be the better contented therewith.

The very ſight of our men abhorred in Coching

What at thoſe wordes the king ſeemed to be in heauines, & tolde the Factor, that now it appeared very well, that he had but ſmall confidence in him, that he would aſke him licenſe to depart, and therfore he tolde him he would giue him none: but rather requeſted him earneſtly not to haue any ſuch miſtruſt, for he there gaue him his worde, and it ſtode him ſo much vpon his credite, in preſeruing them all alyue, that he would rather loſe his kingdome and lyfe withall, then deliuer them to the king of Calycut, or to other that ſhould doe them any harme. And if ſo be that his euill Fortune were ſo great that he ſhould loſe Coching, yet there would not lacke a place of ſufficient ſtrength to ſende them vnto, vntill the comming of the next Fleete from Portingale to the Indias.

The aunſwere vvhich the king of Coching made to the factor

And

Digitized by Google

And although sayd he, the king of Calycut shoulde come with a great power, yet for all that he is not assured of the victory: for it is seene many times that few with valyant hearts, doe giue the ouerthrowe vnto great numbers without strength: much more hauing as I haue, Iustice & equitie on my side. And therefore he willed them to be quyet, & to pray vnto their God to giue him ỹ victory. With these words, knowing well that the king did speake them with a louing minde, our men remained somewhat eased of the feare wherein they were, and would haue killed his hands, but he would not suffer them so to doe, nor yet would agree that they should helpe him in his warres, which they did offer him to do, but answered them, that he would not place them in anye such daungerous place, for that it stode vpon his credite so much to keepe them alyue. And for that they should remaine as witnesses, how much he did trauell to saue their lyues, therefore from thence forth he committed the keeping of them vnto certayne Nayres, such as he had a confidence in.

Fewe hauing the right on their side, preuayle most times against nũbers that come in an euill cause.

And that this mutenie might ceale, and they from thence forth not haue anye occasion to murmure against our men, he commaunded to be called afore him all his Noble men, such as were with him, and also certaine of the principall Nayres, which were the occasion of all this trouble, & spake vnto them after this manner.

I Cannot but be verye heauie, to see so lyttle truth remaine in you: For I meruayle nothing at all at the rusticall sorte of men, whome oftentimes their pouertie enforceth to vse all kinde of villanye. But of you, I doe greatlye meruayle that are Nayres, that haue bene alwaies true in your dealyngs, that you now would haue me breake my worde and promise, that I haue alreadye giuen to the Captayne Generall, concerning these Christians, which was to keepe his men to the vttermost of my power, and to loke that no man shoulde doe them anye harme or vyolence, but alwayes for to haue as good a regarde vnto

The king of Colchings Oration to his noble men.

Digitized by Google

„ vnto them as vnto mine owne naturall ſubiects. And there-
„ fore he left them in this my Citie, which was done alſo by
„ your conſents. And ſince you doe perceiue, that the King of
„ Calycut hath a fewe more men then I, ye would perſwade
„ me to doe contarry to my promiſe: ſo that if I were of ſo
„ ill a nature as you would haue me to be, then ought you of
„ all other to abhorre me, and crye out vpon me. Be ye here-
„ in your owne Iudges, If you remained with anye other
„ King vpon his word, would you allow that as well done in
„ him, which you would haue me doe, by theſe Chriſtians?
„ In eſpeciall, counting him as we account of this man, for
„ our enimy, hauing none occaſion ſo to be, as the King of Ca-
„ licut: and I your King, hauing no occaſion to deliuer you,
„ as I haue none to deliuer theſe Chriſtians? Which, ſince
„ it is ſo, what is the councell that ye minde to giue me her-
„ in, that may not be reprehended in another? If it be for that
It is better to dye vvith honor, then to lyue vvith the infamous name of a rude and lieng Prince.
you are afeard of the King of Calycut, then know this, that
it were better to dye an honourable death then to liue with
diſhonour, then which there cannot happen greater to mee,
then to breake my word, nor yet more infamie vnto you,
then to be ſubiects to a ruſticall and a falſe King, in eſpeciall
againſt theſe Chriſtians, who haue brought me ſo great pro-
fits as they haue done. And as for the King of Calycut, hee
well knoweth that if he would haue conſented that the Fac-
torie might haue bene ſetteled in his Citie, he might haue
„ kept them in his Countrey. But now becauſe they are
„ gone he mooueth theſe warres, the rather, for that hee well
„ knoweth my power is but ſmall, and therfore mindeth to
„ reuenge on me the loſſe he hath receiued. If his meaning be
„ none other, then to hunt theſe Chriſtians out of the Indies,
„ and to fight with him, whoſoeuer receiueth them into his
„ Countrey, why then doth he not beginne his warres firſt
„ with the King of Cananor? But that is not the occaſion
„ onely, but the enuie which he hath to ſee me benefited, and
„ for that with his pride he ſuppoſeth, that I am not able to
„ reſiſt him. All this doe I very well vnderſtand, and more-
„ uer I doe receiue comfort in preſeruing of theſe Chriſtians,
hoping

Digitized by Google

hoping in God, that he therefore will giue me the victory against him. And as touching you that are my friends, I pray you therefore to stand to me.

Now all that were present hereby, seeing this his determination, marvailed greatlye at his constancie, and craued pardon at his handes for the feare they found themselues to be in before, proffering all of them to liue and dye in his seruice: for the which he gaue them heartie thankes. Immediately after this, he commaunded the Factor to be called with the rest of our men, vnto whom he tolde all what he had done, and in their presence named for Captaine generall, the Prince Naramuhin his brother, and next inheritor to the Crowne, & commaunded euery man to obey him, in as ample manner, as his owne person. His charge was set downe, that he should march forward with fiue thousande fiue hundred Nayres, & entrench himselfe hard by the Foord, by which waye he knew for a most certaine, that the king of Calycut was determined to enter into ỹ Iland of Cochin: whereas at an Ebbe, the water commonly vp but to the knees.

The kings brother made generall of the field, and armie

How the Prince of Calycut made offer sundrye times to enter into the Iland of Cochin, by this Foord, and how he was resisted by the Prince of Cochin. Chap. 53.

NOw the king of Calycut hauing notice, that Naramuhin had pitched his royall Armie hard by this Foord, to resist thereby his entrance into Cochin, he was somewhat feared therewith: in especiall for that he knew the foresaid Prince, to be one of the valiantest Gentlemen, that was accounted off in all that Prouince of Malabar, & the most fortunate in warres. Somewhat therefore for this feare, more then for anye good will that he ought to the king of Cochin, to vse any kinde of courtesie towards him, he sent him this letter.

Digitized by Google

The king of Calycuts letter to ye king of Coching

I Haue trauailed as much as I could to excuſe this war with thee, if ſo be that thou wouldeſt temper thy pride, & doe ye which I haue requeſted thee, being as it is, ſo iuſt, neceſſary and profitable vnto vs all. And for that this our falling out might goe no farther, I giue thee to vnderſtande, „ that I am come to Repelyn with a great power for to en„ter thy Country, & there to take thoſe Chriſtians which are „ with thee, withall their Merchandize: yet notwithſtanding, „ I will firſt aduertiſe thee, that my deſire is, that thou doe „ ſende them vnto me, which if thou will doe, then will I for„get the enuie and hatred I haue conceiued againſt thee for „ that which is paſt, whereas otherwiſe, I haue promiſed to „ take thy Countrey from thee, & put all thoſe that are dwel„lers there, to the ſworde.

Although now the King of Cochíng had very great lack of men, and did well perceiue that it might come ſo to paſſe, as the King of Calycut had written vnto him. Neuertheleſſe, he neuer meant to moue his determination, but did aunſwere after this manner.

The aunſwere which the king of Cochíng made to the foreſaid letter

IF thou hadſt demaunded of me after a ciuill order, & with louing wordes, that which thou doeſt commaund with ſo great a pride, I would not haue iudged thee of leſſe valour, then that thou thinkeſt I might take thee to be off: For where there is wiſedome or ſtrength, there is no diſcurteſie ſhewed by meanes of ill bringing vp. Theſe be things that God is not pleaſed withall: neither yet haue I ſo offended „ him, that I ſhould conſent ſo much to thy loſſe, or think that „ the victory ſhould not be mine and theſe valyant mens that „ are with me. Thou ſhalt be welcome with all thy pride, „ and I verely beleeue, that with theſe few which I haue, ouer „ and beſide my iuſt quarrell, ſhall ſuffice to defend me from „ thee, and other mine enimies. Thou ſhalt neuer finde mee „ ſo weake, that I will doe anye thing with ſuch ſhame as „ thou demaundeſt. And if ſo be, that thou haſt vſed to ac„cuſtome thy ſelfe to ſuch deceipts, ſo it is: I did neuer vſe

the

Digitized by Google

the same, neither yet will I molestome my selfe to see. „
Touching the Christians, or any part of their goods, take „
thou no reckoning, for that I doe minde to defende the „
same. Therefore to be short, sende me no more messen- „
gers.

With this answere was the King of Calycut so offended, that he sware he would destroye all, and revenge himselfe vppon the King of Cochim. And therefore forthwith hee departed from Repelym the 18. daye of March, and entered into the Lande of the King of Cochim, in the which he did no hurt, for that the Lordes of that Style were all in his favour. And on the seconde daye of Aprill, being come neere vnto this Foorde where Naramuhin was intrenched, some of the King of Calycuts Captaynes had great hope through the multitude of their men which they had with them, to giue the onset, with determination to passe the Foorde: but it was so manfullye defended, that they retired with the losse of many. The Calicutians repulsed from passing ouer the Foorde.

Whervpon the King of Calycut take this for an ill beginning: but for all that, after that hee had pitched his Campe, he sent the next daye the Lorde of Repelym with as many more men as there was the daye before, and sundrye Paraos by water, supposing that then he would passe ouer this Foorde. But it chaunced farre otherwise, and they mist at that time of their purpose, for that Naramuhin as yet, did valyauntlye defende the same with a stout courage.

At this present, were with him Laurenso Moreno, with other more of our men, which shewed themselues lyke valyaunt Gentlemen, as before time they had done in diuers other Battayles, which the aforesayde Prince Naramuhin hadde with his Enimies, in the which hee had alwayes the victorye, with the losse of many of their men. When the King of Calycut perceiued his losse, and being now, as hee euer was, inconstant and fearefull, hee euen repented himselfe, that euer hee did beginne these warres. Inconstancie in the king of Calycut noted.

Gg.ii. For

For he thought that immediatly vpon his comming to this Lord, he should haue passed the same. Wherefore he sent againe another messenger to the King of Cochin, that he forthwith should send vnto him those Christians which answered, that since he would not deliuer them before time, when as he had occasion to make vse of them, what shall he thinke he would doe vnto, when he hath the aduantage. But he aduertised him to looke well vnto himselfe, for that now he would not be contented onely with defending his Countrey, but hoped to giue him ye ouerthrow: which indeed had taken effect, if so be that his owne subiects, had not forsaken him. Within this mean while the King of Calycut remained in some feare, and indeed without any hope of victory, if so be that it had not bene for his owne souldiers, which gaue him counsell to send to ouerun certaine townes of Cochin, which lay hard thereabouts, he would haue left the warres. Which had the sooner bene finished, if Naramuhin had not bene driuen to send to succour those Townes, with some of his men. The king thought ye by this meanes remaining there but with the fewer, his strength should be thereby diminished.

A stout stomacke of a prince

But this pollicie was preuented by Naramuhin, who had a meruailous forecast to foresee such innouations. And for all this he furnished all places, where it was requisite, in such sort, as though himselfe had bene there present. And notwithstanding all this, the King of Calycut lost manye of his men.

How Naramuhin Prince of Cochin, was slaine by treason, which the King of Calycut practised: and also how the King of Cochin receiued the ouerthrowe, and was driuen to go for Cayppin for succour, and called with him all his men. Chap. 54.

Digitized by Google

THE king of Calicut seing that his Captains could not passe through that forde to encounter with Naramuhyn, he forthwith practised how he might passe the same by some policie. For the which intent he secretly vsed conference with the paye maister of those Nayres which Naramuhyn had in his campe, and agreed vpon this, that there should be no paiment sent to the Campe, as before he was wont to send daily, but that they should go to Cochin to receiue the same there. And for his reward that he should consent thervnto, he sent him a great present. By this meanes therefore Naramuhyn remaining alone and vnfurnished, his enimyes might passe the sayd ford the better. This being agreed vpon, the payemaister according to his promise, sent worde to the Captaine, that all such Nayres as were in wages with the king of Cochin, should come and fetch their wages, for that he could not send it them as before time. The Nayres hauing licence of Naramuhym, he charged them to retourne afore day, who promised him so to doe, howbeit they coulde not come, for that their paiment was delaied, till it was broad day: and thus whilest they were in Cochin, the king of Calicut entered the ford with his whole power both by lands and by sea, and with much ordinance, and the whilest that Naramuhim remained thus alone, the king of Calicuts power grew to be greater then euer it was before. Then gaue he the onset, at the which Naramuhin was driuen to retire, vnto certeine Palme trées, where ioyned vnto him all his men that he had left, he cast them into one squadron, which being as they were but few, did oftentimes breake the aray of their enimies, with the which there were many slaine.

Treason practised against prince Naramuhim

But as Naramuhins power was but small, so they were compassed round about. And after that he had done manye notable acts, he was ouerthrowne, both he and two cousins of his which ther also very valiant gentlemen, with sundry others. Thus was he and all his slaine which remained in

Prince Naramuhim and his power ouerthrowne.

Digitized by Google

the field. The king of Calycut would not followe the chaſe of thoſe that ranne awaie, for that it was night, for ſo long the battaile indured. Ther were many of the enimies ſlaine alſo.

This newes being brought to the king of Cochim, hee was therewith a while as it were beſide himſelfe, and almoſt of euery man taken for dead, in eſpecial of our men that were preſent. Thoſe Nayres that were our mens keepers made no account of them, for that they had inough to doe to ſuccour the king. When this ouerthrow was ſpread abroade, partly for the ill will which they ought our men, they ſayde that they were the cauſe of Naramphios death and the others, & that the king was not able to deliuer them from death. With this, the king returned to himſelfe, and began to weepe, and ſpake ſundry wordes, which our men did not vnderſtand, for that his remembrance was as it were taken from him, ſo that being hard by him, hee ſawe vs not, but at length he aſked for vs, with that our men drew neere toward him, who made vs alſo to weepe, onely to ſee him in that agonie. And being fully come vnto himſelfe, he willed them in anye caſe not to feare, neither yet to doubt that this miſchance ſhould haue any ſuch power, as to make him chaunge from that which he hadde alwayes promiſed. For which wordes they would haue kiſſed his hands, but he would not conſent therevnto, and hearing the ſturre that his men made againſt ours, he ſayd vnto them.

Comfortable vvords of a prince.

The kings Oration made vnto his ſubiects about the loſſe of his kingdome.

NOw that Fortune doth ſhew her ſelfe froward againſt me, I had thought that as true friends and louing ſubiects ye wold haue trauelled to giue me herein ſome comfort. But ye are deſirous to followe and ſerue the king of Calycut, which as often as I doe remember, it doubleth my paine for the death of the Prince my brother, and my Couſins, and ſince you alſo are againſt the Chriſtians, whome I haue ſo oftentimes incommended vnto you, you doe well knowe, that it will bee much more griefe vnto

Digitized by Google

vnto mée, that they at your handes ſhoulde receiue anye ,,
hurt (then I haue alreadie receiued for the death of my ,,
kinſmen, ſince they lyke true ſubiectes dyed in my de- ,,
fence) and you are deſirous to perſecute thoſe whome I ,,
haue receiued vnder my protection, and ſuch as remaine ,,
with mée for my comfort. It were a harde matter for me ,,
to perſwade my ſelfe that this vnderhande happened vnto ,,
mée, for being vnto theſe men as I ought to doe. Doe ,,
you not iudge ſo, for I will not beléeue that they were the ,,
cauſe, neither yet for that I doe fauour them, therefore ,,
God doth fauour the king of Calycut againſt mée. It is ,,
not ſo, but for that I haue offended him otherwiſe: I am ,,
very glad that there hath béene this occaſion giuen, that I ,,
might receiue condigne punihment, and that the king of ,,
Calicut might bée the onelye executor of his iuſtice. And ,,
that alſo for all other offences that I haue done, I might ,,
bée punished by him in ſeeking my deſtruction, the rather ,,
for that I doe kéepe my promiſe with theſe Chriſtians, ,,
in eſpeciall, béeing as wée bée, ſo much bounde vnto them. ,,
Wherefore weie well this cauſe, and let it not ſinke into ,,
your mindes, that for yllings clemencie to theſe Chriſti- ,,
ans, and for defending them I receiue this punihment, ,,
neither yet that the king of Calycut hath power to ouer- ,,
throwe my power which I came make, and deſtroye me ,,
altogether, although that nowe bée driueth mée out of Co- ,,
ching. ,,

The Fléete of the Chriſtians will not tarrye long, ,,
and then the Generall will reſtore vnto mée againe my ,,
kingdome. In the meane ſpace lette vs goe to the Iſlande ,,
of Vaypin, which is ſtrong, and for that the Winter is ,,
at hande, I truſt in God wée ſhall eſcape the king of Ca- ,,
licut. And ſince my loſſe is farre more then yours, I com- ,,
fort my ſelfe with this, requeſting you to doe the lyke, ,,
& not to be an occaſion to renue my troubles with this your ,,
mutinie. ,,

Ouerthrowes in warre ſent of God vnto princes for their offences.

They ſeeing the greate conſtancie of their king, mer-

Digitized by Google

merualled much thereat, and immediatlye did quiet themſelues and promiſed him that they would do that which he had commaunded, and ſo they did. The conſtancie of ỹ king was ſo great, that whereas once more the king of Calycut ſent him worde, that if ſo be that he would deliuer our men vnto him, he would preſently leaue the warres, yet he would not conſent thereunto, but ſent him worde againe, that ſince that he had gotten the victorie more by treaſon, then by valiantneſſe, for if ſo be that valure had bene vſed, his brother and couſins had not died, but they were betraied by thoſe that ſaine would kill him alſo. He did not paſſe for Cochin it ſelfe, but hoped that thoſe Chriſtians which he looked for euery day, would reſtore him vnto it again, & likewiſe renewe his quarrell. This anſwere being come to the king of Calycut, he commaunded to deſtroye the whole countrie with fire and ſworde, which commaundement being once knowen, the feare was ſo great amongſt the inhabitants of Cochin, that the moſt part of them ranne away, & with them went two Milaneſis, which were Lapidaries, that remained with the Factor, which vpon the king of Portingales commaundement were brought thether by Vaſco de la Gama: the one of theſe was called Ioan Marya, and the other Pedro Anuoio. Theſe did diſcouer vnto the king of Calycut the feare that the dwellers of Cochin were in of him, & how that daylye they ranne awaye. They alſo did offer the king to make him ordinance, and afterward they made him ſome as it ſhall appeare in the ſequeale of the hiſtorie. The king of Calycut made verie much of this Milaneſis, & gaue them greate rewardes, to the ende thereby he might winne them to make him more ordinance: and hauing certein knowledge, how few people were left in Cochin, & what feare thoſe that remained were in, and how few men the king had to defend himſelfe, he put his men in a readineſſe to aſſaile the ſame. The king of Cochin carrieng ſome of our men in his companie, went to meet with the king of Calycut, whereas that daie he behaued himſelfe that it was wonder to ſee. Neuertheleſſe for all that the enimies being verye many,

The inhabitants of Cochin flye for feare of the king of Calicut.

and

Digitized by Google

and the king somewhat hurt, he was faine to retire, and for that he durst not tarrie another battaile, he therefore repaired vnto another Iland called Vaypin, which is right ouer against Coching, and is verie strong, to the which he carried with him all our men, and all the Factorie, so that there was nothing lost. The Citie being thus disinhabited, the king of Calycut commaunded the same to be sette a fire. After this he sent his men to enter the Iland of Vaypin, which for that our men and others did defend it with greate valour, and for that the Winter was at hand, and stormes of foule weather did beginne, the king of Calycut was driuen of force to giue ouer, and to leaue the warres, and so went to Crangalor, with determination to returne vpon the same Iland at the spring. For the which cause he commaunded to be made manye trenches about Coching, and left many of his men to keepe the same.

The king of Cochin is faine to flye and leaue his citie.

How Vincente Sodre and Blas Sodre were cast away at Curia Muria, and what other Captaines did afterwards. chap. 55.

VIncente Sodre with his fleete being departed from the harboure of Cochin, without hauing any respect to succour the king, or those that remained in the Factorie, but would needes goe toward the kingdome of Cambaia, to take such rich ships of the Moores as come from the red sea to Calycut. Vpon the same coast he woke by the helpe of other Captains fiue ships, in the which onely in ready money there was found two hundred thousand Cruzados. The most part of the Moores were slaine in the battaile, and their ships burnt. From thence he kept his course toward certain Ilands called Curia Muria, which stood a seaboord the Cape of Quardafum, where hee thought good to bring his ships a ground, which were all open.

Digitized by Google

This fleete departed fiftene dales after Alonſo de Albuquerque, and ſo as well the one as the other, paſſed in their voyage great ſtormes, in the which was loſt Pedro vas de Lucga, Francisco de Albuquerque, which departed laſt of all, came firſt, and before Alonſo de Albuquerque, who brought with him Nicholas Coello to Anfadina, who came thether in the month of Auguſt, where as yet he found Pedro de Taide with their Captaines, which were forced to winter thet. Ans having certeine knowledge of the warres that were published betweene the king of Calicut and the king of Coching, and all about our men, they went immediatly with all the fleete, which was of fire ſailes to Cananor, for that he would encourage himſelfe the better thereof, and what had paſſed in Cochin. At their arrivall in Cananor our men were verye glad of their comming. The king of Cananor himſelfe reioyced ſo much, that he went to viſite the Captaine generall a ſea boord, and told him all what particularly had happened to the king of Cochin, and where the king was.

As ſoone as he knew all this, he immediatly departed toward Cochin, to the which place he came on Saterdaie at night, being the ſecond day of September in the ſelfe ſame yeare. As ſoone as his comming was knowne to the king of Cochin, ther was great reioyſing at the ſame, not onely of the king & our men, but of all the dwellers in Cochin. There were ſundrie that at his comming did ſo reioyce, that they played upon ſundrie ſorts of inſtruments, in token therof. All thoſe that were in their trenches by the king of Calycut's commandement, ſeeing this great ioye and mirth, and perceiuing ther ſo great fires, as ſoone as the night came, came their waie to Cranganor, for the king of Calycut had commanded them to doe, who had knowledge of their comming by the waye of Cananor. Immediatly on Sundaie in the morning, Francisco de Albuquerque came to an Anker at the entering of the river of Cochin. The king ſent his Factor, alſo ſent to viſite him by the Factor.

The king of Cochin reioyceth at the comming of the Portingale fleete.

Digitized by Google

On the Sunday morning, Francisco de Alburquerque hauing left his ships in good order, toke his boates, being very well armed, and went in the same vnto Vaypin, & caried with him also two Caruells to succour him, if there should come any Parao's from Calycut. As he went some what far off from the Caruells, came after him Edwarde Pacheco, who suspecting wherevpon he went, leapt into his boat with some of his men, which came after him, with such hast, hee made with his rowing, that he ouertoke him before he came to Vaypin, where the king of Coching was tarrieng for him along the water side, with as many men as went with him to the land. The pleasure was so great of their meeting, that as some as the king of Coching had sight of our boates, he began to crye out saieng: Portingale, Portingale, and all those that were with him did the lyke. Our men also out of their boates did aunswere after the selfe same manner, saieng: Coching, Coching, in despite of the king of Calycut. As Francisco de Albuquerque did leape aland, the king of Coching was there ready, and toke him in his armes, with the teares in his eyes, for exceeding ioye, saying: that his desire was to lyue no longer, but to see himselfe restored to Coching, that his Subiectes might well perceiue, how much he was bound to passe so great troubles as hee had past, & all for to serue the king of Portingale. In whose name, the Captaine generall gaue him great thankes, with promise to reuenge his quarrell vpon his enimies. And for his part he gaue him ten thousand crownes to spend, during the time that he did not receiue his rents, and this money was taken out of the Coffer he carried: which gift ỹ king of Coching esteemed very much, for that he was very poore. Also his subiects iudged this to be done right liberally as it was noted amongst them all: and from thencefoorth they thought all to be well bestowed, that the king had done for our men. Forthwith they carried the king to Coching, where he entered with great glorye, besides the reioycing which his subiects made: and from thencefoorth all our men, were amongst them well esteemed. Now it was not long

The king of Coching ioyfully beholdeth the return of ỹ Portingale Fleete.

Liberalytie vvinneth the hearts of the most barbarous & vnfriedly people

Digitized by Google

after that the newes how that the King was returned to Cochíng, was brought to the King of Calycuts eares, and of the money that the Captaine generall had giuen him: who ſeing that there was likelyhod of wars, ſent certain Caymales vnto his Countrey to defend the lande, for that it apperteined vnto the kingdome of Cochíng.

How Franciſco de Alburquerque began the warres againſt all thoſe that were enimies to the king of Cochíng: and how the Caymall of the Hande of Charanaypin was ſlaine. Chap. 57.

The King of Cochíng being put in his poſſeſſion, Franciſco de Albuerquerque toke his leaue of him: His entent was, that yet afore night he would partly reuenge himſelfe vpon his enimies. And ſo he went to the Iland which is ouer againſt Cochíng. Now as the inhabitants thereof were ſomewhat forgetful, and thought not that as that daye he woulde returne, ſo therefore did our men ſet vppon them before they were aware, and that vpon ſuch a ſodaine, that there were ſlaine of them a great number, and ſundry of their Townes ſet a fire, and afterward they imbarked themſelues without receiuing any harme. And Franciſco de Alburquerque going toward his Fleete, met with the King, and tolde him what he had done. The nert day after, he returned to the ſame Iland, to deſtroy it altogether. He caried with him to y number of fiue hundred men, for ſo many he had, with thoſe that he found in the other two ſhips, and there went with him all his Captaines: The Caymall of that Iland was tarrieng for him along the water ſide, with two thouſand Nayres, wherof the moſt part were bow men, y others had ſpeares, ſwords, and targets. They did all they coulde to keepe our men from landing, which they did without receiuing any hurt: and they being galled ſore with our Crocebowes, were driuen away.

Our

Digitized by Google

Our men followed them vnto the other side of the Ilande with so stout a stomacke, that they had no other remedie but to take the water, leauing behinde them many of their companye slaine and hurte. And our men not hauing with whom to fight, did set fire to all the Townes ỹ were in the Ilande, so that the whole Iland was destroyed. The nert day following, Francisco de Alburquerque went to another Iland called Charanaipin, which was belonging to a Caymall, subiect to the king of Cochin, who serued in al these warres with the king of Calycut. Concerning whom by certaine spyes that the king of Cochin had in that Iland, he vnderstood that he had made himselfe in a readines, to defend himselfe against the Captaine generall, hauing redie in armes three thousand Nayres of the which were seauen hundred bow men, and fortie with shot, besides all their houses well fortified with sundry trenches round about. Also he had by Sea certeine paraos with Ordinance in the same, which the king of Calycut had giuen him. These wer afloat in a certaine harbor, where our men pretended to disimbarke themselues: which were there placed, that they shoulde resist our comming into that place, if that it were possible. About this place there was great store of boates, all furnished with Ordinance: but the enimies at the length, were driuen to runne away, so that our men remained quietly in the harbour, where there stod in the water, yea, euen vp to their girdles a great number, alwaies forsending our landing, throwing at vs both stones, and speares, and shoting off their arrowes in great plentie. But as soone as our Ordinaunce began to go off, then they desperately began to run away and giue place. Howbeit, they being aland, did so ioyne themselues together, & that in such sort ỹ they gaue our men inough to do to disimbarke themselues for that the same was so valiantly by them resisted.

The Caymal & his powver, put to flight by the Portingales.

The great valiencye of the Moores, in resisting the enimies landing.

And for all that our men could doe, they would neuer leaue the feide altogether, but by a lyttle and a lyttle they retired themselues to their Palme trees for to haue amongst them succour: and there what with the hinderance that

Digitized by Google

that our men found by those trées, they defended themselues a small time. But afterward they ranne awaye, and that without order, so that our men followed them to the vttermost, in especiall the Constable of Francisco de Alburquerque, whom they call Pedro de Iares, who found himselfe alone with three Nayres which came toward him. The one of these shot an arrow, which strake him in the breast, and for that he woze a breast plate, it did him no harme. And as the Nayre loosed off his arrow, went off lykewise his shot, and strake the Nayre in the breast, so that he ouerthrewe him, and afterward shot off another peece vpon one of the others that remained, and killed him also. By the third he himselfe was hurte in the legge with a certaine weapon, which they doe call a Gomya, and with the same hée that hurt him would haue run awaye, but at length this Pedro Iares, killed him with his sword. Thus all the enimies being put to flight, Francisco de Alburquerque did then determine to march toward the Caymalls house, wher he had gathered together all his force, which was somewhat strong by reason of certaine trenches that he had made about the same. The Captaines were diuided on both sides of the Iland, and each of them had their men with them, and in the middes of the Iland were placed those of Cochin. In this order they went all burning and spoylyng such Townes as there were, and that without any resistaunce. Going in this order, there came certaine paraos from Calycut on that side of the Ilande which Edwarte Pacheco had the charge off, who for ỳ they were many in number did leape a land, & encounter with ỳ forsaid Edwarte Pachecho, & had giuen him the ouerthrowe, (if Francisco de Alburquerque had not bene) who came thether with those that he had in charge. And for that he found greater resistaunce in his Enimyes, then he loked for, and also being somewhat afeard least the Caymall would haue come thether to succour the rest, which if he had so done, would haue put him in daunger: he therefore commanded Nicholas Coello to take with him Antonio del campo and Pedro de Tayde, and to set vpon the

Digitized by Google

the Caymals house, who was there slaine in defending him selfe valyantly. At that time manye more of his companye were both slaine and hurt, the house was lykewise spoyled and ransakt: of our men were hurt eighteene, and one onely slaine. In the meane while that this was a doing, Francisco de Alburquerque and Edwarto Pacheco, did put to flight those of the fleete of Calycut, many of them lieng along the water side sorely hurt and slaine, the others hadde inough to doe to imbarke themselues in their Paraos, in the which afterward they fled away. And in remembrance of so great a victory as this was, Francisco de Alburquerque made certains knights, for that through their manhood the victory was obtained, for of three thousand Nayres the Caymall had, the least part escaped: and the Iland was all destroyed with fire and sword: and thus after this sorte was the King of Cochin well reuenged ouer his enimies. The Caymal slaine in defending his house valyauntlye

Knights made after a valiant victorie.

¶ Of the warres which Francisco de Alburquerque began to make against the Lord of Repelyn: and how by the King of Cochings license, a Castle was begun to be made called Manuel. Chap. 58.

ALl this being ended, then determined Francisco de Alburquerque to make warres against the Lord of Repelyn. And to begin the same, he departed with his other Captaines in the night toward a towne of his which is foure leagues from Cochin, whether he came the next day about eight of the clocke. To receiue him, there were placed along ꝑ water side twelue thousand Nayres, of the which ther were fiue hundred bowmen. The men being come within a Bale shot of the land, began to shote off in such sorte, that the enimies were driuen to giue place, and retire vnto their Palme trees, who being there, do taste the comming of Francisco de Alburquerque.

Digitized by Google

querque. He being diſimbarked, with the reſt of his company did giue the onſet vpon the enimies; hauing Nicholas Coello with his men in the forward, and after him marched the reſt of the Captaines. At the firſt meeting were ſome of our men hurt with their arrowes, which they ſhot ſtanding behinde their Palme trees, which to them were a very good bulwarke. Our men, ſeeing that as they were, and hauing thoſe trees for their defence, they could not make them to remoue, did then remoue themſelues, and got on the one ſide of them, ſhoting at them with their Croſſebowes and Caleeuers with the which there were ſome ſlaine, and the reſt fled away vnto their Townes, after whom our men followed ſo eagerly, that there was made a great ſlaughter, yea, farre greater then in the fieldes, for that there they were ſcatered & heere they toke them altogether in their ſtreets, where they might the better deale with them. The Towne being left alone, was immediately ſet a fire, the ſpoyle therof was giuen to thoſe Nayres of Coching which went with him: this reward Francisco de Albuquerque gaue vnto them, that they ſhoulde not thinke his comming into the Indias, was to robbe any man, but rather to reuenge ſuch iniuries, as were ſhewed to the King of Coching.

The king of Coching thinketh him ſelfe ſufficiently reuenged of his enimies.

Now at his returne with this victory, he was ioyfullye receiued at the Kings handes, who requeſted him, not to trouble himſelfe any further, for that he iudged himſelfe to be well reuenged. But he aunſwered him, that although his highnes was ſatisfied, yet he was not ſatisfied, but requeſted him to giue him yet further licenſe, for y he accounted it not any paine to fight in his ſeruice. Howbeit he ſeing y the king was contented, did then aſke him licenſe to buyld a Fort of timber, ſo aſmuch as after that he ſhould go for Portingale, there might remaine the Kinges ſeruaunts for ſure and without feare, and all ſuch as ſhoulde be left in the ſame. And this he declared to be the greateſt ſeruice he coulde doe for the king his maiſter, in confirming thereby

To this requeſt the king aunſwered, that his deſire

was

Digitized by Google

was to serue the King of Portingale, with a greater matter then that was, for that he must needes confesse, that by his meanes, he was restored vnto his Kingdome of Cochyn, againe. And therefore he willed him to make the same, and what els he would: and if that neede were, he himselfe commaund it for to bee made at his owne cost and charge.

Heere the king of Cochin gaue license to Francisco Alburquerque to build a Fort in Cochin.

This license being graunted, with the consent of the other Captaines, it was thought good the same to be made harde by the riuer of Cochyn, right ouer against the Citie within the lande, for that there it was thought most sureste, and from thence they might best resist the comming of the King of Calicut. Mieter. And for that they had neither lime, stone, lande, nor anye other necessaries thereunto, hee was driuen to make the Castle of timber, which the King commaunded to be cut in great plentie, as well Palme trees, as of other timber. He sent also many of his men for the furtherance of the worke: saying, that he would not haue anye of our men to labour, for that as yet the troubles were sufficient that they had sustained in the warres past. But for all that, the Captaine generall would not let, but cause them to worke.

The Captaynes were deuided with their men, and began their worke the 21. and twentith of September, in the selfe same yeare 1503. It was a great pleasure to see, with what diligence our men did labour: insomuch, that it was sayde there, that there were no such men in the worlde against, as ours were, for that they serued for all assayes.

¶ How the Fort of Cochyn was made an ende off: and how Francisco de Alburquerque and Alonso de Alburquerque retourned againe vppon the Lord of Repelyn. Chap. 59.

Digitized by Google

Foure dayes after that the Forte was begun, came thether Alonſo de Alburquerq, who by meanes of the great ſtormes & other foule weather, could not come ſooner: notwithſtanding he brought all his men with him in health, of the which, Francisco de Alburquerque was very glad, and immediately deputed a parte of the Forte to be made by his men, and by this his commming, the Forte was made an ende off in a ſhort time: which being as it was, made of timber, was as ſtrong & faire as though it had bene made of lyme and ſtone. It was builded foure ſquare, and within the walls from the one ſide to the other, it was ſquare euery way nine fathome. The walls were made of two orders of Palme trees and other ſtrong timber, ſtrongly ſet into the ground, and yoked together with hoopes of yron, and nayled with great nayles. Betweene the two orders of trees, they were rampered up with much earth & ſande, and at the ende of each of theſe Corners, wer builded bulwarks, which were reuenished with Ordinance. Alſo there was caſt about the ſame a Caue or Ditch, which alwaies was full of water. The next daye after that this Forte was ended, there was made a ſolemne Proceſſion, in the which went the Vicar of this Forte, who carried in his hande a Crucifix vnder a Canopie, which the Captaines caried ouer him, ſounding before the ſame their Trumpets, with great ioye. With this ſolemnitie they entred into ỳ Caſtle, which the Vicar did bleſſe. And by commaundement of the Captaines, they cauſed the ſame to be called Manuel, in perpetuall memory of the king Don Manuel, vnto whom all thoſe that made the ſame were ſubiects. The Forte being bleſſed, ther was a Maſſe ſong, at ỳ which tyme was alſo a Sermon made by Frier Gaſton, wherein was made mention how much they were bound to giue God great thankes, ỳ would

A deſcription and cõmendatiõ of the Forte of Coching.

permit

Digitized by Google

permit that countrey, that from the Malian kingdome vnto that is of Portugale, and lying on the cape of the Occident, there should not Portugales haue a land so farre of, as are the Indians, and to make there a plot amongst such a multitude of enimyes vnto the Catholike faith. For that by the clemencie of God, there should be, but a beginning of many others. All the rude people there greatly hated they that were vnto the king of Cochin, for that good seruice they had done vnto the king their soueraigne, which words being brought vnto the king of Cochin, he esteemed thereat very much, & gaue vnto them great thanks for the same. After all this they returned following their waues against all such as were enimies to the king of Cochin, and best certaine to the Moores which were along the coast, fiue dayes from Cochin, the rather for that they were admonished by their spies, that those dayes that should kepe the same, were vnto them vnfortunate. They carried with them for that purpose certaine pieces of ordinance, and great store of hand gonnes, and other artificiall things, as they vse of the same before they came to the place, at which time there were more then fiue thousand enimies there assembled, as by the reckoning of such as knew them, which were three hundred, and those all bowmen. About the Moores there was with all the Captaines slaine by the first volley Francisco de Albuquerque with the others out of the other towne, which vnto them shall come shot off. In the first they toke the enimies vpon a sodeine, with the feare whereof they made them runne away. For that enimy that as soone as they landed did not set fire vnto them all

[illegible] enimies running, there were many slaine of them, and after that they were ready of following them, they destroyed the countrie. In the meane while the day was raised, and for that they [illegible] there was assembled together of Cochin eight fiue thousand Nayres, which did set vpon the rere of the enimies running, so that they were in greate danger, in especiall for that Pacheco,

They followe the vvars farther for ye king of Cochings reuenge.

At the alarome soũ ded, the force of ye Moores increaseth

[illegible] followed [illegible] he had left the same,
[illegible] told him that [illegible] with their bowes
and arrowes there were of his men hurt to the number of
eight, although they defended themselues valiantly, and
killed many of their enimies. But for that the enimyes
were so many in number, they had been ouerhanded, if
[illegible] Captaines [illegible] which were not slaine, had
not withdrawen themselues and succoured them. The ene-
mies seeing this, and hauing lost their hope to reuenge their
[illegible] ye then that they had done, and ruining about
[illegible] them in the ground dwelt certain with
dead men, which [illegible] their bowes and hand guns in
their hands. The enimies being gone after this sorte, our
men [illegible] fire in diuers places, which burned round about,
[illegible] other [illegible] which were [illegible] floats, and so departed, go-
ing their way all night long howling and crying, as who should
say, they mocked them, which thing greeued the Lord of Re-
pelyn, [illegible] that [illegible], considering how ill they
[illegible] the same [illegible] they [illegible] our men
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] a league
[illegible] [illegible] certaine [illegible] whether
[illegible]
[illegible] Repelyn, and
[illegible]
[illegible]

The Captaines generall hauing knowledge
[illegible] of these tydings, & to the end they should re-
maine nothing of the Lords of Repelyn's
[illegible] [illegible] determined, they determined to fol-
[illegible] them with [illegible] [illegible]
night they departed, but before they would
[illegible] they rested themselues till it was midnight, hard by
[illegible] that they might by the morning of the day come to the
[illegible] whether they minded to go. And [illegible] it was dark,
yet they departed at [illegible] time, although [illegible] one of them could
not see the other. And Alonso de Alburquerque being loth

to

The readi nesse and forwyard-nes of Alonso de Albuquerque.

A base minded & cowardise kinde of people

The

and

The enimies towne set on fire

and so, that they would not the count de, they followed them not, but bet them to the towne. Then Edward o Pacheco, & Pedro de Tayde did put themselues with their men to go and burne another Towne which stode a little aboute the other, and in the way they met with eighteene Parao's, all armed, of the king of Cochins, whith they did put to flight, and the towne being burnt as they before had determined, they returned to their Generales. And for that it was somewhat rathe for to returne, they went to the Iland of Cambalan, minding to destroy it same, for that the Caimall was enimie to the king of Cochins, where they burnt a great towne. From thence Edward o Pacheco with the Parao's of Cochins, went to burne another towne, but before they could accomplish the same, they fought a good while with their enimies, of the which there were foure slaine. The Towne being set a fire, he returned with his men, of the which were seuen hurt, and being very ro, he fought with thirteene Parao's of Calicut, which he did ouercome with the helpe of Pedro de Tayde, & Antonio del campo, which came thether at that instant. The enimies being retired into a certeine creke, there went after them Edward o Pacheco, and was the cause that one of those Parao's ran a ground, and so he took the same, and in the meane while the others went their waie. And for that our men that rowed were wearyed, they went not therefore after them, but returned vnto their Captaines generall, with whome they went to Cochins. And giuing the king an account of that which they had done, he yelded himself sufficiently contented with reuenge of his enimies, and prayed them to giue ouer the warres.

They returne frō pursuing theyr enimies

What the captaine Generall had done going for a Tone laden with pepper, and how Edward o Pacheco did put to flight 34. Parao's. chap. 61.

Note

NOw by reason of these foresaid wars, there was none that durst bring one graine of Pepper to sell at the Factorie. Neither yet durst the merchants goe to seeke the same out, and for all that they were able, they could not get more then three hundred Bahars. And so they sent word to the generalls, willing them to send for it, being nine leagues off from Cochin, y which they immediatly did, being accompanied with all the other Captaines of the Fleete, for that they shoulde goe for the same against all their enimies. And because they would not be knowne, they departed in the night, and in their way Edwarde Pacheco did destroy an whole Islande, where he with onely those of his owne companie fought with five thousand of his enimies, & the Generalls did in the meane while put to flight seven Paraos. This being done, Edwarde Pacheco and Antonio de Saldanha went and destroied a great towne in the firme land, fighting with, & putting to flight two thousand Nairas, of the which there were many slaine and hurt, and of our men not one. With this victorie they returned to their Captaines Generall, who sent immediatly for the pepper, which was but a lyttle way off, and being night, themselues did depart toward Cochin, from whence they were minded to send the Tone which carried the pepper, laden with merchandise to giue in truck of the same. And for that it might goe the surer, Edwarde Pacheco was sent with other three Captaines, who carried each of them fiftie men a peece, & of Cochin they went two Paraos. Edwarde Pacheco being departed, did passe the foresaid straight before it was day, & therfore he was not seene, & being broad day did passe by the mouth of a creeke, where ther were twelue men without number, y which shot at our men with their arrowes. And if so be y our boates had not ben planked or fenced with their shields & targets, our men had received great hurt, for that the river was but narow, so y with their arrowes they might reach them. Edwarde Pacheco

The valiant courage of Edvvarde Pacheco

Digitized by Google

checo ſeing that they were ioyned all together, and iudging that on that ſort they might do them ſome harme, commanded immediatly one of the Captaines to keepe ẏ Tone, and he with the other two, & alſo thoſe of Coching did determinatly come with ẏ prpers of their boats a land, where there were two thouſand men of the enimies, amongſt the which he commaunded the Fawlkons to be ſhotte off, the which did ſo enter amongeſt them all, that with the ſame there were many torne in peces, ſo that it made the reſidue to retire from the water ſide, & there remained place inough for our men to diſimbarke themſelues without daunger, & ſo they did. And as the moſt part of them carried handguns, ſo they did ſet vpon them with the better ſtomacke. The enimies for all that gaue no place, but ſhot of their arrowes, which were ſo many in number, that it was thought that one met in the aire with another. The ſkirmiſh was valiantly handled of the one ſide, and of the other, which in ſuch ſort indured a quarter of an houre, yet notwithſtanding, the enimie at lengthe did runne away, and left of their company many ſlaine, the cauſe whereof was, for that they brought no weapons to offend their enimies withall. Then our men purſued them to a village, out of the which there iſſued many Paires, which ioyning themſelues with thoſe ẏ fled away, returned vpon our men with ſuch a ſtomacke that they ran in great daunger, for that there were of the enimies wel nere fiue thouſand men. A great multitude of thoſe ẏ were ther, did then as much as they could to go betweene the riuer and our men, but to reſiſt them that they ſhould not ſo doe, and to kill them all; our men defended themſelues, and repelled them with greate difficultie. And as the riuer was thus defended, ſo they ran into the ſame, in the which they ſhewed themſelues to be valiant. And when they drew nere to thoſe that were in their boates, they ſeparated themſelues into two ſeuerall places, leaning one broad way, that our men might the better imbark themſelues, ſtanding without the daunger of their Ordinaunce, with the feare of the which the enimyes did ſuffer our men

An hot & valiant ſkirmiſh.

to

Digitized by Google

to imbarke themselues, wherat there was none either slaine or hurt, which seemed to be a miracle.

¶Heere is contained the scituation of the Citie of Coulan, and how the Apostle Saint Thomas came thether, and there was martyred: and Alonso de Alburquerque went and laded there, and in what place did settle a Factorye. Chap. 62.

IMmediatly after this was the king of Calicut aduertised of the losse of those paraos, and also of all the successe that our men had in those wars, for the knowledge wherof he vsed all diligence, in respect of the great desire he had to turne vs out of the Indias, for that naturally they could not abide vs. And fearing least that we should take their countrie from them, they were so much the more desirous to hunt vs away. This thing they procured with great instance, and also were the occasion that we should haue no Pepper. Making this account, that if so be that we should goe without the same vnto Portugale, it would be the occasion, that we would not returne againe to the Indias. By this meanes therfore we were driuen to prouide for the Flete in their riuers, and that with such a number of men, that we could neuer haue aboue a 1200. quintall of Pepper, of 4000. Bahares, that the Merchants had promised, and yet this we got with great shot of Ordinaunce, and hurt of our men, and with infinit shedding of bloud of the enimies.

Why the Indias wer most earnest to hunt our men out of their Countrie

In the ende, the king of Calycut found the meanes by merchants his friends to perswade with the merchants of Coching, to giue to the Captains generall no more pepper, excusing themselues with the warres. Which thing was done in such sort, that neither with the request of the king of Coching, neither with anye gifte that was giuen them by Francisco de Alburquerque, he could moue

Digitized by Google

as perſwade them to giue them anye more Pepper. Now the hope of our men for hauing the ſame anye more in Cochin being paſt, Alonſo de Alburquerque with Pedro de Tayde, and Antonio del Campo, were driuen to ſeeke for the ſame at the citie of Coulan, which they did the ſooner, for that they knew that the gouernours of y Towne were deſirous of our factrie, the which was offered to Pedro Aluares Cabrall, and the Lorde Admerall. Thoſe that thus went thether, were fully bent to make warres againſt them, if ſo be that they wonlde not giue them lading for theyr ſhips. Alonſo de Alburquerque being departed from Cochin with certaine Captaines, came into the port of the Citie of Coulan, the which ſtandeth twelue leagues from Cochin, and from Comarin xviii. the which is beyond the ſame, bearing toward the South.

The diſcriptiō of the citie of Coulā.

This Citie (as I ſaye) before that Calycut was builded, was the principall of the Prouince of Malabar, and the greateſt and moſt principalleſt Port of all that Coaſt. Notwithſtanding, as yet their houſes be both greate and fayre, and ſo are alſo theyr pagodes and Chappells comparable to theſe of Calycut. Their harbour or hauen is verie good, they are well prouided of all ſortes of victualls, the people are in condition lyke vnto thoſe of Callicut. The inhabitants are Malabars, Gentiles, and Moores, and the Moores are verie rich and greate merchauntes, in eſpeciall ſince the warres begaune betweene Calycut and vs, for many merchauntes of Calycut lefte the ſame, and came to dwell there. They doe trade in Cormandyll, Ceilon, in the Ilandes of Maldyua, Bengala, Pegu, Cathaia, and in Malaca.

The king of this countrie is Lorde of x greate kingdomes, wherein are many great Cities and rich, which haue belonging vnto them ſundrye goodlye harbours, by reaſon whereof his reuenues are great, and for that cauſe they are riche of Treaſure, and are able to make a greate power of men of warre, which are for the moſte parte men expert of petite ſtature. He lyeth alwayes in his

gard

Digitized by Google

gard, their hindred women, which doe all bowes, and are very perfect in the skill of shooting. They haue about their breasts certaine bands of lynnen cloth, with the which they doe binde them so harde, that they are no hinderaunce vnto them in their shooting. This king hath for the most part of his time warre with the king of Narsinga, which is a great trouble vnto him. He doth continually keepe the most part remaine in a Citie, the which they doe call Calle. The Gouernours of Coulan are as it were Aldermen, in the which, there is a certaine Church, which the Apostle Saint Thomas builded, comming thether to preach the Catholike faith, by reason whereof, there were great numbers that turned Christians, as well of the Gentiles, as other wise, so that of them there are preached from generation to generation the number of twelue thousand housholders, that are scattered abroad in the Country where they haue their Churches. The king of Coulan seeing how many were daylye conuerted, and the damage thereof, did banish him out of his Countrey, who being thus gone, went to a Citie called Malepur, lying nigh that Coast, and in parte of the kingdome of Narsinga. And yet being there, for that he was so followed by the Gentiles and by the Christians of Coulan, did apart himselfe to the Mountains, where they affirme he died, & from thence he was brought to be buried in Coulan, in a tombe that was made in the foresaide Church. This Church is now ouergrowen, with bushes and woodes, for that the Citie is vninhabited, onely there remaineth a poore Poore, which doeth keepe the same, for that there are no Christians neere vnto it: and there he liueth vpon the almes of all those that vsually thether in Pilgrimage, as well of Christians as of the Gentiles, to the which daily not letting to giue their almes, suppose vnto them, for that he was banished out of their Country. Alonso de Albuquerque being come to the harbor of this citie, & the Gouernours hauing a newe knowledge thereof, they came to visite him a boorde his ship, where betweene the same there was tolled a peace, of which peace was made vpon condition, that we should haue our Factory in the Citie, called Cranganor

X gard of women with bowes & arrowes.

S. Thomas baniſhed the country

The conditions of the peace made with the inhabitans of this Citie.

as much lading of ſpices and other commodities, as would lade preſently thoſe ſhips, the which immediatly they went about to prouide. In the meane while that our men were there, and whileſt that the one ſhip toke in his lading, the other two kept abroad in the ſea, to watch all ſuch as paſt by from other places: and thoſe that they could diſcrie, were brought, ſome with their good wills, and others were brought againſt their wills, to ſpeake with Alonſo de Alburquerque, and to ſhew him obedience as to a Captaine generall of the king of Portingales. He offered no hurt to any, but onely to the Moores of the red ſea: for all ſuch of them as he toke, he would cauſe their ſhips firſt to be rauſacked, and afterward to be burnt, in reuenge of that they had done to Pedro Aluares Cabrall, of the which thoſe of Coulan were greatly afraid. The houſe for the Factorie being finiſhed, and the ſhippes laden, Alonſo de Alburquerque left there for Factor, one Antonio de Sola, with two ſcriueners, the one called Rodrigo Anaſo, and the other Lopez Abello: and for interpretour one called Maderi, and two Friers for Chaplaines, with others, the which in all were 17. And ſo leauing them in peace, he departed toward Cochin.

How the Captaine Generall departed for Portingale, and how he left in the Indias for Captaine Generall Edwarde Pacheco. chap. 63.

ALL theſe things remaining in this order, there was ſent a meſſenger to Francisco de Alburquerque from Cofebiquin, a Moore of Calicut, which was a great friend of ours, as I haue before declared, ſignifieng that the king of Calicut was determined to ſet vpon Cochin, immediatly after he was gone to Portingale, and ſo take the ſame, and to fortifie it in ſuch ſorte, that

that he might defend the entering into the harbour, what-soeuer armis should come. And for the furtheraunce of this enterprise, he had gotten the good will of all the nobilitye of Malabar, and that also for certeintie it was vnited, that the king of Cananor and the king of Coulan would secretly aide him. Ouer and besides all this, that the Merchauntes Moores did offer him great helpes toward the same. After the selfe same sorte, did Francisco Reynel write vnto him a fewe dayes after, and how that the king of Calycut was preparing of souldiers, besides that hee had commanded much ordinaunce to be made, and that the Moores of Coching were greatly in his fauour, and therfore he did aduertise him not to truste much vnto them: within two daies after the receipt of these letteres, the king of Coching wēt to visit Francisco de Alburquerque, and after the same manner told him that which he had learned of certeine Bramenes that came from Calycut, and willed him to beware & to foresee what daunger he was in to lose Coching, if so be that ther did remaine no armde of defence for that purpose. Laieng further before him, how many daungers he had bene in for the maintei-naunce of our friendship, and for that cause his owne subiects had risen against him, and that nowe they minded to doe the like. Yet notwithstanding he had such a hope in our men, and our helpe, that he desired none other succour for to defend him from his enimyes, wherfor he prayed him not to say him nay.

VNto this, Francisco de Alburquerque, answered him, that if so be that he did well knowe what hee hadde gotten, by such losses as hee hadde receiued, for the fauour which he had shewed vnto our men, he would receiue other greater losses if it were possible. For setting a side the great renoume and fame which he hadde gotten of a true and valiaunt Prince, hee hadde also recouered for a friende the king of Portingale, which is Lorde of such subiects as hee hath seene, who also are his to obeye and serue him in all thing, when neede should require.

The generals cōfortable answere vnto the king of Coching.

And

Digitized by Google

„ And further, that they would with small trouble make him
„ Lord of greater cities then Cochin, and that also he might
„ beleeue, that euen as they did restore him vnto his estate,
„ euen so they would conserue him in the same. And although
„ that there were made with the king of Calycut the great-
„ est peace that could be, yet he saide he had so small a confi-
„ dence in his doings, that he would not leaue him without
„ an armie of ships, before that he departed from the Indias,
„ for that he did well knowe, how little truth that king vsed.
„ And if so be that vntil this time he had dissembled with him,
„ it was onely to see whether by this meanes he might lade
„ his ships, for otherwise he could not do it, in especiall y time
„ being as it is so neere spent.

With this answere, the king was satisfied: and since that Francisco de Alburquerque could haue no more pepper then that he had, which was but a small quantitie, he determined to depart towards Portugale, but first he would nominate him that should remaine in the Indias for Captaine generall, that the king of Cochin should vnderstand the same. And for that he knew, that he that was appointed, would thinke it very dangerous to remaine there with so few men as he was able to leaue him, he durst commit it to none of his Captaines. Howbeit after that he had offered the same to them all, and they were not willing to accept it, last of all he gaue the gouernment to Edwarte Pacheco, who did accept it with a great good will, more for to serue God and his king, then for any profite he knewe that he should get in remaining in the Indias.

Edwarte Pacheco apointed Captaine generall for the Indias.

And when it was once spread abroad throughout the king of Cochins land, that Edwarte Pacheco was he that was appointed, he was well pleased therewith, for that he hadde heard before of his valour. This being concluded vpon, Francisco de Alburquerque made saile, carrieng with him all the rest of the Fleete. But first he gaue the king to vnderstand that he did carry the same no further then to Cannanor, for because of the Fleete of Calycut, which might encounter with him, and so worke him some displeasure in his

Digitized by Google

port, where he minded to stay (as he did) procuring the libertie of Rodrigo Reynel and the others that were there. This determination being knowen to the king of Calycut, he sent him word, that it were not requisite that he should haue him away, but rather offered him, if so be that he would tarrie, to giue him the Pepper that he had promised to deliuer. But heading this, he supposed that he gaue the same out, that Rodrigo Reynel with the others, should be the more desirous to remaine in the Indias. At this instaunt came in Alonso de Albuquerque which returned from Coulan, and the time being spent, he would not tarrye there any longer, but with the rest went toward Cananor. And being there arriued, there came a letter from Rodrigo Reynel, in the which he wrote vnto him, that the king of Calycut was certainly bent to set vpon Cochin, immediately after that he were gone. And that all those dissimulations which he vsed in offering to giue him Pepper, was but to feare he had conceiued that he would haue burnt his ships, which were as then in his harbour. This newes the Captaine generall kept close to himselfe, that the same should not come to eares of Edwarte Pacheco, vnto whom was lefte the shippe in the which he went, and two Carvells, of the which were Captaines Pedro Raphael and Diego Viceres, besides a shippe boate.

Also they lefte him some seuen and twenty men, and those whole, that were needfull, for all the rest were sicke. Also, there was left him, the most parte of the Ordinaunce, with the most parte of the munition that they were able to spare. Now being knowen to them all, of the great power that the king of Calycut had in a readinesse, they did then mervayle, that Edwarte Pacheco would accept the same, in especially, for that he remayned with so small a Fleete. Some therefore there were that gaue out and sayde, God haue mercie vpon Edwarte Pacheco, and those that doe remayne with him: supposing that in very deede, he shoulde not escape.

And although these words were spoken within his hea-

Digitized by Google

hearing, yet for all that he would not but tarrie. The Captaine Generall being dispatched, did depart towardes Portingale, the last of Januarye, in the yeare of our Lorde 1504.

1504

They depart from the Indias and saile towardes Portingal

The first that made saile was Alonso de Alburquerque, Francisco de Alburquerque, and Nicholas Coello that departed afterwarde, were cast awaye, Pedro de Taide was driuen to Quyloa, and entering vppon the Barre, his Shippe was there cast awaye, with the most parte of his men, by meanes whereof hee went to Monsanbique in Zanbuco, where afterwarde hee dyed. Hee lefte there a Letter written of all his successe, and also declaring in what estate the Indias did remaine, which hee commaunded to bee deliuered to any Captaine that should come thether from Portingale.

Alonso de Alburquerque, and Antonio del Campo came to Lisshborne the three and twentieth of Auguste, in the yeare aboue sayde, and tolde the King of the estate of the Indias, who also presented him with foure hundred weight of the greate sede of Pearles, which is called Alhofer or Ragges, and with 144. pounde weight of great Pearle, of greate estimation, and eight Oysters, in the which the same do growe: and also a Diamond Tablet, the which was as bigge as a greate Beane, besides many other iewells, and also two horses out of Persia, the which were great runners.

How Edwarte Pacheco behaued himselfe in Cananor, and in his course towarde Cochin: and what else he past with the King at his arriual. chap. 64.

FRancisco de Alburquerque being departed towardes Portingale, Edwarte Pacheco which remained for Captaine Generall in the Indias, hauing a while stayed

in

Digitized by Google

to Cananor to take in there his victualles, brought him-
selfe vnder layle, and came to an Anker without the point
of Cananor, and from thence hee sent Pedro Raphaell
to goe a long the Coast, and to cause all such Shippes as
he coulde discrye to beare with the Captaine, and to re-
knowledge him for their Generall. At this instaunt was
Diego Pieres a newe rigging of his Caruell in Cochin.
And all these Shippes that were brought before the Gen-
erall, gaue an account whether they were bounde, and
what they carryed, and also of whence they were. And if
so be that he founde anye Pepper, hee woulde take the
same, as he did from some other Shippes that were bound
to Calycut, in the which order hee vsed such rigour, that
afterwarde he was feared of all men.

Whilest hee was thus at an Anker, there came vppon
him in the night a Fleete of twentye and fiue Saile of
Shippes, which vppon a sodeine made him to coniecture
that they were of Calycut. And seeing himselfe in such
danger, hee commaunded to let slippe their Cables by
their Halfes, for that vppon such a sodeine they coulde not
weye their Ankers with their Capstaines, and with the
same he cut and made his course into the Sea, to bring
himselfe in the winde of those Sayles, vppon whome hee
commaunded to shote off all his Ordinaunce. And as they
were Shippes laden with Rice, so ranne they their waye as
fast as they coulde. Some there were that ranne a grounde,
and more hurt had bene done, had it not beene for a greate
Ship of the Moores that came in their company, in the which
were well neere to the number of 400. Moores, that were of
the kingdome of Cananor. These thinking that they might
take our Shippe, came sodeinly vppon them, alwaies shoting
of their arrowes, and we answering them likewise with
our Ordinaunce. This skirmish continued till it was al-
most day, and then they tolde what they were. After that Ed-
warde Fenton had thus well beaten him with his Ordi-
naunce, with the which were nine of his men slaine, besides
many that were hurt, they tolde what they were.

A valiant skirmish with an Ethnor ship of the Moores.

Digitized by Google

And ſo that there durſt not paſſe anye ſhip by ſo feare that they ſhuld be taken, the Captaine Generall departed towards Coching, and in the waye he fought with certeine ſhips of the Poꝛtes, ſome he burnt, and others hee toke, beſide thoſe that were ſunke. Thus with greate victoꝛie he arriued at Coching, and landed at the Caſtle, where he vnderſtoode by the Factour, that the newes of the pꝛeparation that the king of Calycut had made ſoꝛ the warres was moſt true, and that the king of Coching ſtood in greate feare thereof, ſoꝛ that the Poꝛtes that were inhabitantes of Coching, were againſt their king ſoꝛ the mainteining of theſe warres againſt the king of Calycut. The next day following the Captaine Generall went to viſite the king of Coching, carrieng his boats with him well armed and fenced, with certeine paueſes made of Boꝛdes, and ſette with flagges, beſides certeine Ordinaunce which they had in the ſame, with the which he ſhewed himſelfe to be verye ioyfull, the rather that the king might take occaſion to be merie: who after that he vnderſtoode how ſmall a fleete there was left to defend his countrie withall, he could not bee but verye penſatiue, and ſayde vnto the Captaine Generall, that the Poꝛtes of Coching hadde tolde him that hee did not remaine in the Indias to defende him from the king of Calycuts powꝛer, but to gather together the Merchanndiſe that were in the Factoꝛye in Coching, and in the Factoꝛs cuſtodie, with all thoſe that were there, and ſo to carry them all to Cannor and Coulan.

What greate feare ye king of Coching vvas put into by his traiterous ſubiects.

And therefoꝛe hee earneſtlye requeſted him to tell him if it were ſo oꝛ not, foꝛ hee did thinke the ſame to be true, by reaſon that there was leſte ſo ſmall a Fleete. Which the rather alſo made him to doubt that hee would not tarrie to fight with the king of Calycuts powꝛer, but would doe as the Poꝛtes hadde tolde him, wherefoꝛe hee pꝛayed him to aduertiſe him of the truth thereof, ſo that if it were ſo, hee might in time ſeeke his reuenge, although as then hee ſhould hardlye finde the ſame, ſince that he had no further helpe.

The

Digitized by Google

The Captaine Generall perceiuing the distrust that the king had, was offended therewith, and answered him, saieng.

I Woe much merualle of thée (considering that thou hast so great experience of the fidelitie of the Portingales) that thou doest aske me whether I doe remaine for so traiterous an act, as this is, that in such a time I should do as the Moores haue told thée, & thou wilt beléeue them, knowing that they are so greatly our enimies. Thinking that thou vnderstanding of this, shouldest not bring in question such a matter out of all reason. And if so be that Francisco de Alburquerque would haue done any such thing, it had bene a great deale better that he with all his Captains had done it, and not haue left me alone to do the same, & to runne in daunger, and to méete on the seas with so great a fléet of the kings of Calicut, for them to set vpon mée only. And if it were so that I should haue remained for to haue done so foule a déede, yet I would haue tolde thée thereof, that I had so meant to doe, for that I was afeard of the king of Calycuts power. But for that I doe take thée to be a man indued with reason, I did suppose that thou wouldest not haue thought ill thereof. For otherwise those béeing warned thereof, it might haue bene very profitable vnto thée, to haue remained free from the enmie and malice of the king of Calicut. Which thing if so be that the Moores had considered of, they would not haue tolde thée so great a fable. Beléeue me, if they could haue done thée a greater iniurie, they would haue done it, for the good will thou doest beare vnto vs. This I doe knowe very well, but let not that trouble thée. For although thou doest lose them, and all the rest of thy subiectes, yet thou doest recouer me, and as many Portingales as béere remaine, who all will die in thy seruice if it were néede, for that is the onely cause wée did remaine in the Indias, and in especially: for there was no man that bound me thereunto, if so be ý I wold not, but only the fidelitye & truth which thou hast alwaies vsed to-

The answere which the Captaine Generall made to ý king of Coching.

Digitized by Google

„ wards our men vntill ſuch time as thou diddeſt loſe Co-
„ ching, and diddeſt ſee the ſame burnt. For the which cauſe
„ thou oughteſt to eſteeme the better of thy ſelfe, for thereby
„ thou haſt exalted thy fame through all the Countrie, and
„ therefore thy name will remaine for euer, which is the grea-
„ teſt treaſure that kings cannot leaue behinde them, and the
„ onely thing that all men doe ſeeke for. And beleeue me, when
„ the king of Calycut did firſt ſet fire to Coching, the ſame
„ was his deſtruction, which was afterwarde well reuen-
„ ged vppon thine enimies by the Portingales, & ſo thou ſhalt
„ now bee as well defended by them. And although thou do-
„ eſt thinke vs to bee fewe and a ſmall Fleete, yet I doe pro-
„ miſe thee, that very ſhortly we will ſeeme to bee verye ma-
„ ny by our valyantneſſe. And I hope in God that we ſhall
A fewe va- ſo defend whatſoeuer ſtraight or paſſage the king of Caly-
liant men cut ſhall enter into, where aſſuredly we will tarry and not
are better remoue our ſelues from thence, neither night nor daye, and
thē many for the paſſages that are ſtraight, our armie is inough, and
more na- therefore it ſkilleth not, there remaine no more for the ri-
ked and uers, for that theſe are ſufficient. And ſince that they chuſe
cowardly „ me to remaine, beleeue certeinly that they did well knowe
„ they left him that ſhal excuſe thee of thy trauaile, and of the
„ wearieng of thy men. And therefore be thou merrie and re-
„ ſolue thy ſelfe (that by Gods grace) it ſhall not happen now
„ vnto thee as heretofore it didde, when thou diddeſt loſe
„ Coching: for I and theſe that doe remaine with me ſhall
„ take vppon vs the whole charge and daunger of the
„ warres.

How the Moores of Coching prepared to go from thence: and how the captaine Generall ſtayde certeine of them that they ſhould not departe, and what more he did. chap. 65.

The

Digitized by Google

The king being with this, somwhat eased & recomforted, touching that the Moores had told him, the Captaine generall went to see the streights, & to fortifie them, which had great neede thereof. But they all were wel furnished, saving onely the ford, which he commanded to be fortified with stakes, that ther might enter no vessells of the enimies. In the meane time he was advertised by a Letter from Rodrigo Reynel, that a principall Moore of Coching, and besides diverse others, did procure all that they could, to leave the citie, that ý king might remaine alone, & that therupon this Moore hath come twice to speake with the king of Calycut in his owne behalfe, and in the name of the others. This newes troubled the Captaine Generall a while, howbeit to disappoint them of their suttle dealing, and that the same shoulde take no effect, hee thought it necessarie to execute this principall Moore, that the others might conceive some feare thereof. This being knowne to the king of Coching, he woulde not consent therevnto, thinking that if so be that he were executed, the others would make a mutenie immediatly, and then there shuld be no victualls brought into the citie, for that those did provide the citie therewith in trucke of their merchandise, and therefore he thought best to dissemble with them all. The Captaine Generall seeing that the king woulde not consent therevnto, tolde him that he woulde talke with the Moores himselfe, and that he had thought to vse some policie that none of them should depart out of the citie. But first he commaunded all his owne men to obeye him in all such occasions as should be needfull or requisite, which commandement the king also gave out amongst his subiect: this being done, the Captaine generall went with forty of his men to Coching, to the house of this principall Moore called Bedinamacar, who dwelt hard by the river side, requesting him to send for certeine Moores which he did name, for ý he wold consult with them vpon a certeine matter which did concerne them all.

Digitized by Google

To whom the Moores came immediatly, for that they wer afeard of him, and when hee ſawe them all, he ſaide vnto them.

The generals Oration to the Mores cõcerning his abode in the the Indias.

I Did ſend for you all, honeſt Merchants, that you ſhoulde vnderſtand, wherefore and for what cauſe I remained in the Indias, for that it is poſſible that all you do not know. Some there be that doe report that I do remaine to gather together the Factorie, and ſo to carrie the ſame to Coulan, and to Cannor: but that you may vnderſtand it is not ſo, I will therefore tell you the truth. I doe remaine for no other purpoſe but onely to keepe Coching, and if ſo be that it were needfull or requiſite, to die my ſelfe, and all thoſe that doe remaine with me, in your defence, in preſeruing you from the king of Calycut. And this ſhall be manifeſt vnto him, if ſo bee that he doe come, for I promiſe you all, that I will meet with him in the way of Cambalan, where as it is tolde me he will enter, and if ſo be there he dare fight with me, I will not doubt but to take him priſoner, and carrie him with me into Portingale. Wherefore vntill ſuch time, as you doe not ſee any thing to the contrarie, I earneſtly requeſt you that you doe not goe from Coching, for that I heare that you are minded to goe from thence, & that you doe allure the reſidue of the inhabitants with you, for as you are the chiefeſt and principalls, ſo all the common ſort of people doth follow you. Now I meruaile much y being men of ſo great wiſdome as you are, you will leaue your houſes in the which you were borne, & the country where in you haue dwelt ſo many yeres, not for feare of any thing that you haue ſeene, but onely of that which you heare, which thing for women to doe were verye ill, much more for you that are men. But if ſo be that you would go, when you ſhall ſeeme in daunger, or elſe runne awaie, I woulde not blame you, but to goe awaye before you haue ſeene any of theſe daungers, or anye battails fought, I account the ſame, either cowardiſe, or elſe mallice. You doe well know, that in a manner yeſterday, how few Portingales did

How few Portingals haue vanquiſhed thouſads of their enimies.

Digitized by Google

giue the ouerthrowe to thousands of our enimies, which
now also come to take vs out. And if so be that you will
alleadge, that we were more in number then we are now,
indeede it is so, for then we fought in open fielde, where it
was necessarie there should be many: and nowe in a nar-
rowe waye, where a fewe shall doe as much as though
were many more. And since that I can fight, as you haue
well heard of the same, for that I haue bene he that haue
done most hurt to our enimies (as the king of Coching is
a good witnesse thereof) I neuer meane to yelde, who shall
lose more then you all, if I be ouercome. Haue ye therfore
a sure hope in me, and in those that remaine with mee,
and tarrie vntill such time you may see the successe of all
things that we doe loke for, and since that your king doth
tarrie, why will ye goe your waie? Remember that I and
the others that doe remaine with me, doe soiourne in the
Indias so farre from our Countrie, to defend the king of
Coching, and you that are his subiects and naturally borne
in the Countrie. Will you then forsake him and your coun-
trie? It were great shame for women so to doe, much more
for honest men as you are. I doe desire you that you do not
dishonour your selues, nor yet doe to me so great an iniu-
rie, in hauing no confidence that I will defend you: for I
doe giue vnto you all my word, that I will defend you fro
a greater power then any the king of Calycut canne make.
For therefore and for this cause was I chosen, and those
that did appoint me to remaine in the Indias, did know of
the warres that the king of Calycut intended, and what
power he had, in respect whereof I doe once againe request
you, to beleeue that the king of Calycut shall neuer set his
foot in Coching. Wherefore I desire you that none of
you doe remoue, for whosoeuer doth otherwise shall well
vnderstand, that if so be I may take him I will hang him,
and so I sweare by my lawe. And moreouer I giue you to
vnderstande, that none of you all shall escape, for heere in
this port I doe minde to tarrie, watching both day & night.
Now therfore let euery one of you loke to that which shall
be-

An hard thretning but polytike and necessary.

Digitized by Google

„ behoue him, and if so be you doe performe that which I „ haue requested you, doe you then assure your selues to haue „ me for your friend, and if not, for your mortall enimie, and „ more cruell then you would wish me to bee to the king of „ Calycut. And therfore each of you, speak plainly your mind „ what you will doe herein.

This being spoken, it gaue him occasion to encrease his choler, that without any consideration thereof, hee did speak so lowde, that the Moores with the same did double their feare, that they had conceiued of him, fearing indeede that immediatly he would haue hanged them all. Wherfore presently they began to excuse themselues, touching that hee charged them with all, but he woulde not tarrie the hearing of the same, to the intent to put them in greater feare, but sent immediatly for his Ship, causing it to be brought to an Anker, hard ouer against Coching, besides one of the Caruells, and two of the boates, which he appointed forthwith to bee set in such order, that there coulde none goe out of Coching by water, but must needes bee seene.

He had also many Paraos, which he hadde caused to bee newly rigged, with the which in the night, he watched in the riuers, which runne round about the citie. Also at Sunsetting he would take all the boats that could carry men or traffe, and commaund the same to be brought a boorde his ship, and to keepe the watch, and in the morning he returned them to their owners. With this diligence they of Coching were so feared, that there was none y durst go forth without his licence, & by meanes of those extremities vsed, the Moores and Gentiles were quiet, yet for all these troubles that the Captaine Generall had, the most part of the night he would venture a land into Repelyn, in the which he burnt townes, killed men, and tooke greate store of Cattell and Paraos, and also did them sundrie other iniuries, at the which the Moores of Coching much meruailed, namely, how he could suffer so great trauaile, and therfore they gaue out, that he was the diuell.

they cal y Captaine Generall a Diuell.

How

How the Captaine Generall made an entrie into Repelyn, and also how he departed towardes the straights of Cambalan, there to tarrie the king of Calicuts comming. Chap. 66.

T this instant was the king of Coching aduertised that the king of Calicut was come to Repelin, to gather his power together, and so to go from thence to Coching by the straights of Cambalan. After y selfe same manner did Rodrigo Reinel, write vnto him, who lay as then very sicke, and afterward dyed, which the king of Calycut hearing, commaunded to be taken all that he had. This being knowne to the Moores of Coching that the king of Calycut was in Repelyn, they wold haue giuen occasion to the townes men to haue runne away, but there was none that durst venture to doe it, for feare of the Captaine Generall. Who after that he knew for certeintye of his being in Repelyn, and that all men might vnderstand how little he did esteeme the king of Calycut and his power, and armie of ships, did one night set vpon a towne of the countrie of Repelyn, at such houres when all were a sleepe, and did set fire to the same. And after that it was well kindled, our men were knowne, and immediatly there came many Naires, as wel of the towne, as also from other places thereabouts adioyning. The Captaine Generall was forced to retire, & that with great daunger, vnto his boats, with fiue of his men hurt, and of his enimies there were many slaine and hurt, & yet for all that, those enimies that remained aliue, followed him a good while. And as our men returned toward Coching, there were shot by them so many arrows which fell vpon their boates, that their targets were all couered with the same.

The captaine generall & his men inforced to retire vnto theyr boates.

This being knowne to the king of Coching, that he was come to the Castle, he went to visit him, for that he accoun-

Digitized by Google

ted that enterpriſe for a great matter, in eſpecially the king of Calycut being there preſent, who had in a readineſſe ſo greate and mightie a power, and ſo he ſaide. At the which the Captaine Generall laughed, and therewithall he tolde him that he woulde deſire no more but that the king of Calicut would once come, for that he woulde fight with him a battaile, and then woulde be apparaunt the valiantneſſe of his men. They of Coching being now all quiet, as alſo the Captaine general having made vnto the principals an Oration, he prepared his men in a readineſſe for that he minded to depart to the ſtraights of Cambalan. And in the meane while he left in the ſhippe xxv. men with the maſter, which was called Diego Perrera, whom he lefte for Captaine in his abſence, and alſo as well furniſhed with Ordinance and ſhot, that they might defend themſelues the better. The names of thoſe that tarried with him I do omit, as alſo thoſe that remained in the Caſtle. Thoſe that the Captaine Generall carried with him, were to the number of xviiii. men: and in one of the boats he appointed for Captaine, him that went for Captaine in the Caruell Santa Maria, whiles ſhe was a rigging, with xvii. men. The captaine Generall went in another boate, in the which with himſelfe there were one and twentie men. Amongſt them all their number was lxviii. men, who all both thoſe that were in the Caruell, and thoſe that were in the boats, being all confeſſed, and hauing receiued the Sacrament, the Captaine Generall departed to the ſtraights of Cambalan, on the Fryday before Palmes Sunday, being the xvi. of Aprill. 1504. Thus departing with great pleaſure, and with ſhoting of their Ordinaunce, leaping, and dauncing, when they came ouer againſt Coching, the Generall landed to talke with the king, which was tarrieng for his cõming by the water ſide, ſo heauie and ſo ſadde, that he coulde not hide the ſame. The Captaine Generall making as though he vnderſtood nothing of it, ſaid vnto him: that there they were all ready with great pleaſure and good will, to depart toward the paſſage, to defend him from the king of Calicut,

1504

These words the Captaine Generall ſpeake vnto the king at his departure towards the paſſage.

Digitized by Google

licut, whom they went to take out, that he should vnderstand that they had no feare of him. The king smiled at these words, as it were suspecting his good successe. Notwithstanding, he appointed him 500. Naires (of fiue thousande which he had in armes) of the which he named for Captaines, Gandagora, and Frangera, which were ouerseers of his householde, and Caymal de Palurta, to whome hee gaue commaundement that they should obey the Captaine generall as his owne person. This being done, the king rode and viewed all our Fleete, who at that time shewed himselfe to be very beautie, to see how few we were in comparison of the great power of the king of Calicut, and vpon the same toke occasion to speake vnto the Captaine Generall, saieng.

the wvords of ỹ king of Coching to the captaine generall.

There was represent vnto him the great danger which he feared might happen vnto him, and that which chanced to himselfe this last yeare. And therefore doe I desire thee, quoth he, to encourage thy selfe to doe that which thou art able, and not to suffer thy heart to deceiue thee, but to remember how much the king of Portingale shall lose in losing thee: and with those wordes his eyes rode full of water, which to see, the Captaine Generall was very sorie, and sayd vnto him.

The annswere the captaine generall made to ỹ king of Cochin.

That better are a few and valiant, then a great multitude and cowards. And whether (sayd hee) our men be valiaunt or not, your selfe haue well seene, & also how contrarywise it fareth with the enimies, your selfe likewise haue had experience. He inferred also howe in that place where hee minded to tarrie for his comming, there needed but a fewe to defend him. And therfore he praied him for to be content, and therewith he departed, and came to the passage of Cambalan, two houres before day, where finding no signe of the comming of the king of Calycut, he went in the meane while, and did set vpon a towne of the selfe same Islande of the Caimalls, where in the dawning of the day he arriued in the Herbour, a long the which there was appointed 800. Nayres to keep the same, which were Archers, and

Digitized by Google

a few with their Calemers, which were there tarying for him. And although thoſe with their calyuers, and the reſidue with their arrowes, ſhot of at our men, in ſuch maner that they ſemed to ſhadow the Element, yet with the pauices of our boates, the which were made of boards of two fingers thicke, much like vnto Targets or ſhields, we did ſo defend them of, that they were driuen to row toward the land, which was done for that thoſe y were there ſhuld geue place, y our men might leap a land. Then y Captaine generall cõmanded his ordinance to be ſhot of, with y which they left a land howbeit, y enemies returned vpon them, & therin ſhewed theſelues to be valiãt, for y ſpace of an houre. But afterward they fled apace, & many of the in the conflict, at y preſẽt were both ſlain and hurt at our mens hands. But after that our men had ſet fire to the towne, and the ſame was well kindled, the captaine generall did retire, & going forward the paſſage, in their way they toke and killed much cattell, which they caried with them: and although the people of the countrey did defend themſelues very wel, yet our men bring come to the paſſage of Canbalan, the Caymall ſent to make peace with the captaine generall, with a certaine preſent, which he would not receiue, neither yet make peace with him, for that he was an enemie vnto the king of Coching. Whereupon the next day after, the king of Calycut ſent him word that he would geue him the battell, and alſo that he was greatly offended that he had placed himſelfe where he did minde to enter. And moreouer, it was tolde him that they did all affirme, that the kinge of Calycut was like to geue him the ouerthrowe and to take him priſoner, or els to kill him in the battell.

Heere the battell was offered by the king of Calicut vnto the captaine Generall.

To the which the captaine generall anſwered, that the ſelfe ſame hope he had to doe by the king, the rather in honour of the daye, which was a ſolemne feaſt amongeſt the Chriſtians, adding moreouer y his wytchys had diſappointed & deceyued him much, to promiſe him the victory in ſuch a day. Then a certaine Nayre which came with this Meſſenger, hearing the Captaine generall ſay ſo, anſwered

him

Digitized by Google

him, and that with a smiling countenance, as though he had mocked him, that there were very few men to doe ỹ which he spake of: saith ỹ the king of Calicuts men were so many, ỹ they were sufficient to ouer the whole earth & the water. Which if it be so, how (saith he) can they be ouercome. With this answere ỹ Captaine generall was greatly offended, & for that he was thought to be one of the king of Calicuts Nayres, he bort him well, willing him to bid the kinge of Calicut reuenge the same. With the which the others that came with the message, were so greatly afraid, that they neuer durst afterward anouch the king of Calicut.

That same euening the king of Coching sent to ayde the Captaine Generall with fiue hundred Nayres, of the which he made no account, nor of the others before, for that he knew they would all run away. In our men, next vnder God, bee had his confidence and whole truste, who all that night made greate feaste, that the kinge of Calicut might vnderstande that they did not feare him, but rather shewed great forwardnes to geue him ỹ battell, of the which ỹ Captaine general was very glad. And therfore before it was day, he spake vnto al his men in this maner. Maisters and my friends, for the great content that I doe finde in you, I doe for most certain prognosticate the great gift ỹ God in his seruice wil geue vnto vs this day. And I doe beleue for most certaine, that as God hath geue vs stomacke (being so few as we are) to dare tary & abide so many thousands of men as there are of our enemies: so he will geue vs force and strength to resist them, & herein wil shew his great power, & as it were a miracle so greate as this is, in ỹ exalting of his holy faith: and in his holye name I do desire you that you wil so beleue, for ỹ without this hope, although we were as many as the enemies are, and they as few as we be, yet all our strength were nothing, and being in this hope, all the multitude of the enemies will come vnto vs but few to ouer come; for they doe iudge vs to be many more then wee are, their feare is such. And this also you may beleeue, that if their com-

The captaine generals words spoken vn to his mē.

Digitized by Google

„ comming as at this day with their great presumption bee,
„ for that they are many, hauing most assured hope to take vs,
„ yet they will haue a feare from hence forth, so that their
„ spirits will be broken, to set vpon vs any more, which thing
„ if they did, it would be more for feare of the king of Caly-
„ cut, then for any good zeale they haue vnto him. And there-
„ fore I pray you remember, that with this confidence you
„ must fight, and God shall giue you the victorie, and that
„ with honour of all the Portingales, and a perpetuall fame
„ amongest the straungers, and deserts before our king, that
„ he may reward you for the same, whereby you shall the bet-
„ ter maintaine your selues all the dayes of your life.

Vnto these words they all answered, that in the battell he shoulde well see how well they did remember his speach. And immedialy they fell vpon their knees and sung the Salue regina in tune, & afterward an Aue Maria with a lowde voice. At this present came Larenco Moreno from the Castle, who brought with him foure of his Caleuer men, for they would needs exercise themselues in this battell. The Captaine Generall was very glad of their comming, for that they were very valiant.

How the king of Calycut gaue battaile vnto the Captaine Generall in the straights of Cambalan, and how he had the ouerthrow. chap. 67.

THis night by the perswasion of the Italian runagates, the king of Calycut commaunded to be made a plat-forme or skonce, on the which there might be placed fiue peeces of Ordinaunce, the which might stand right ouer against wher the Captaine Generall was, that from thence they might shote off their Ordinaunce, at what time they meant to giue the onset, and for that the straightnesse of the passage was a daunger vnto him. So on Palmes sunday the king of Calycut marched forward, with xvii. thousand men, the which were as

Digitized by Google

as well of the Naires as of the Moyes: besides that he went accompanied with the king of Cannails, which were come into him, to aide and succour him; not onelye with their owne persons, but also with their men. That is to say, the king of Tanor with foure thousand Nayres: the king of Bybut, and of cutian, which is hard by the Mountaines of Narsinga, with twelue thousand Nayres: the king of Cocogacco, which standeth betweene Cananor and Calicut, hard by the Mountaines, with eighteene thousand Naires: The king of Curia, which is betweene Panane and Grangalor, with three thousand Naires: Also Nabeadarin, which was Vizire of Cabyeat and Namboa his brother, and the king of Cabyeat himselfe, who had a great number, which for that they were many, I doe not rehearse. The sortes of instruments that they had for the wars were so many and diuerse, that when they began to play vpon the same, it was thought that heauen and earth would ioyne together. Ouer & besides the great multitude of the people, the which did couer the whole earth. Those that went in the vangard, as soone as they came to their setting, did giue fire to their ordinance, which as they lay neere to the Caruel, so it appered partly a miracle, that there was no peece that did hurt it. Notwithstanding our Ordinance being shot off, did all light full amongst the enimies, and killed many of them, although it was before day, the which vntill Sunne did rise, were in discharging out of the Carnell, aboue xvi. peeces.

The kings and Cannals that assist the king of Calicut against the Portingales.

After all this, the whole Fleete of the enimies beganne to come out of the riuers of Repolyn, which were 169. Foystes, that is to say, three score and five Paraos, the which hadde their defence of sackes of Cotten, which deuise was giuen them by the Italians, that our Ordinaunce shoulde not hurt their men.

Each of their boates or Paraos had two peeces of Ordinaunce in them, and fiue and twentie men, of the which there were fiue in euery Parao that had their Calcuers, and all the rest were bow men.

Also there were twentie of these Foystes, all cheined together,

Digitized by Google

gether, for to set vpon the Carvell: Also there were fifty Catures, beside thirtie greate Barks, eath of these hadde his peice of Ordinaunce, and fyftene men, which ferued in him with sundry kindes of weapons.

Besides all these armed vessells, there went other furnished with men, which being all together, it semed that the whole riuer was couered ouer, in the which Fleet were well neere 1. thousand men, and of this fleete was Admerall Nabeadarin, and for Vice Admerall the Lorde of Repelyn. Certeinly to se them altogether vpon the water and lande, was a greate terrour, all of them being halfe naked, some of colour blacke, and others of a darke Tawnye. And vppon their weapons the Sunne did so glister, that they appeared as though they had beene swordes, and newly ground, and so lykewise did their targets, the which were of sundrie coulours, and shewed very gallant And for that our men should stand in the more feare of them, they gaue out great cries and laroms. After this they begaune to sound vppon their instrumentes of warre, which noyse contynued alwayes, nowe after one sorte, and then after another.

Our men bearing amongst such a multitude, and being in they' Carvell and they' boates, could scarcelye be discerned, for with the Fleete, they occupyed almost all the passage, by meanes of ropes they gaue the one the other, which ropes were wounde about with cheynes, that they should not cut them a sunder. And after that they hadde done this, commaundement was giuen, to giue fire to the Ordinaunce, with the which the enimyes were receiued.

The Naires of Coching do all run awaye

At this instaunt those Nayres that were of Coching did all runne awaye, onely Grandagora and Frangora remained for that they were in the Carvell: otherwise they wouldde haue gone as the others did, which had beene no matter, but that they should se how valiantly our men defended themselues in the battell, into the which they went in a great heate.

Digitized by Google

The

The Portingales were ofte to ofte, and lykewise the small shot, that there was none that couldo se one another, for the smoake of the same. The Carvell and the Boates did so flame in fire, and did so cruelly handle the enimyes at the first entering, that there were some in peces some of their Paraos, and many of their men slaine and hurt, without any of our hurt, or hauing in any daunger therof at all. By this time, the enimyes were come, within the throwe of a Bowe shoote, albeit, as they were many, and that without order the one did hurt and hinder the other, so that they could not fight. Yet notwithstanding, the fyfty Paraos that were before, did trouble our men verye much with their Ordinaunce which they had, for that they went cheined together.

Our men being wearied and hurt, and the battaile hauing endured a good while, the Captaine Generall commaunded to leaue to shotte at them, the which till that time had not been shot at the enimies. And after that the same was throwe discharged, they all fledde, and for that they laye very thicke together, it did immediatlye sinke foure of them, and with that they were all ouercome, and so they ran their waye. The residue of the Paraos which did continue in the battaile, were eighteene sunke, and thirteene fledde awaye, the residue game place, in the which there were of the enimyes greate numbers slaine and hurt.

The enimies vtterly discomfited, doe run their vvaye.

After all this came the Vize Admerall called the Lord of Repelyn, with another squadron, and gaue a proud onset, so did the king of Calycut giue the lyke vpon the land. This battaile was farre more behement then the first, in the which were manye more of the enimyes slaine, then before, as appeared by the water which was of the colour of bloud. Yet for all this, the Lorde of Repelyn made to vnde ouerryes, commaunding them to laye the Carvell aboorde, but for all that they durst not venture to doe it, but rather were desirous to goe their waye, as they also that were a land did the like.

Digitized by Google

It was now at this preſent paſt Euenſong, from the time the battell did firſt beginne, in the which were of the enymies ſlaine, not onely by land, but alſo by water. 350. men, which were knowne, beſides others, the which were aboue a thouſand: and of our men there were ſome hurt, but none ſlaine. And although theyr pellets were made of caſt yron, yet they did no more hurt, then a ſtone being throwne. Howbeit, our defences were all torne in peeces, and one of our boates alſo, neuertheleſſe, not in ſuch ſorte, but that it might bee new rigged before that it was night.

How the king of Calicut ſeeing the ill ſucceſſe that hee had in the warres, did enter into councell to leaue the ſame. Chap. 68.

Thoſe kings and noble men which came to ſuccour and aide the king of Calicut, perceiuing that he was thus ouerthrowne, and that with great loſſe both of his men & veſſells, although his power were great, and ours but very ſmal, & that the captain Generall neuer made any reckoning of the king of Calicut nor of his force, but for al that did ouerrun the Countrie, & deſtroyed it, ſome there were of them that made a greate wonder thereat, & ſayd that our God did fight for vs, wherupon they loſt all the hope they had for euer to giue vs the ouerthrowe, and from thence forth they han themſelues in no reputation, but rather were very ſorie that it was their euill hap to come in the aide of the king of Calycut. Thoſe that did moſt repent themſelues of their coming, were ſubiects to the king of Cochin, for that their countries were ſcituated along the riuers, which did put them in the more feare of the Captaine Generall, that he would ſet fire to their townes & houſes, or otherwiſe deſtroie them. And for that cauſe, they determined to leaue the king of Calycut, & wold make no more warres againſt our men, more the that which was paſt alreadie.

And

Digitized by Google

And vpon this condition, they returned to the king of Coching, with whom they reconcyled themselues, and those that did thus were, one called Marugata, Muta Cayma!, and his brother, and Cousins, who immediatly after the battaile, did so secretly depart from the kinge of Calicuts Campe, from whence they went to the Iland of Vaypin, to stay there, till they might see their time, as I haue sayd. But when the king of Calicut had knowledge that they were gone, and also vnderstoode where they were become, he was very sory therefore, which also was the occasion that he renewed all his griefe, that hee had conceyued for his ouerthrow, which he had receyued at our mens handes, that were so few. Wherupon he tooke occasion to rebuke his captaines, saying, that they were good for nothing, and that through their defaulte our men continued and kept these passages. And if so be, that they had had any shame, they would for this time haue driuen them from thence, in especially hauing geuen so often the enterprise to passe the same. When those two Italians that were presente, did replie vnto the king, that although our men had done most valiantly, yet that which they did was like vnto the deedes of desperate men. Notwithstanding, that they were not able to defende themselues long, from such a power as his was, in especially, not hoping to haue any succour. And therefore they willed him to set vpon them often times, for by that meanes it was possible to take them. Some also of those kinges and noble men that came to succoure the king, and that were desirous of warres, did confirme that which the Italians had saide before, addinge moreouer, that God doth permitte his enemies sometime to haue the victorie, for a more greater losse vnto them, and therefore it were good saide they, that he followed his friends counsell, and prooued their stedfastnesse. And although it were so, that he had not the victorie immediatlye, yet hee should not therefore dispaire. The king finding himselfe somewhat vexed in minde with those wordes, answered them saying, Although that eche of you is so valiant, that

The king of Calicut much blameth his captaines for being ouerthrowne by so few

Digitized by Google

the kings answere vnto this aduice.

it appeareth vnto you, a small matter to ouercome these Christians, yet I am not so obstinate to thinke the same. Howbeit I suppose yet, that you doe see in me no such a feare, that thereby you might iudge it needefull, to streng-
„ then me with those wordes. Now what can you tell me in
„ this case, that you may satisfie me withall? For if so bee,
„ that you will consider as much as I doe, you would soone
„ know, how great an acte this is, that you doe make so lit-
„ tle accompt off. I doe not take it in vs for so great a victo-
„ rie in ouercomming these Christians, but rather in them,
„ in defending themselues from vs, as they haue done. Wher-

No doubt but God doeth fight for his seruants

in it hath well appeared, that their God did fight for them.

And will you see how it is so? You maye well consider, that our men are many, and that they haue bene valyant in the warres past, it hath well appeared in many and great battailes, wherein I haue ouercome mine enemies, as you do all well know. But since they haue fought
„ with these Christians, they seeme to be (not as they were)
„ nor durst giue the onset vpon them, for the feare they haue
„ conceiued. And certainly, as farre as I can learne, and al-
„ so all those that are of a good iudgement, we ought to be-
„ leeue, that those workes are rather of God, then of man.
„ For who is he that would not be afeard of them, wel per-
„ ceiuing that all others are? I meane not onely the King
„ of Cochings subiects which came to succour vs, who haue
„ repented themselues thereof, but also manye other of our
„ friends, which in the beginning of these wars did also aide
„ vs.

„ And farther, I am enformed by some, that they haue
„ now offered their friendship vnto the king of Cochin.
„ Which thing, if it be true, it is for that they haue lost the
„ hope they had of any victory on our part, as well for that
„ which is past, as also reputing how lyttle time there is
„ now leste of the Summer, and also for that in the Win-
„ ter they cannot remayne anye time to continue in the
„ Fieldes, because of the great cloesnes and raine, which
„ would then be.

And

And in the ende of the winter, then will there come the fleete from Portingale, which will doe vs as much harme as the fleete did the last yere, and so I shall neuer bee out of vnfortunate mischiefes, but thus in the end I shall be vtterly destroyed.

All this shall be that I shall gette, with the losse of the friendship of the Christians. And it is possible that for theyr causes the Pagodes will not aide nor helpe me as they haue done before time. For although you tell me, that they doe permit sometime their friendes to suffer persecution for their profit, do you not thinke the same also to happen for their offences, as it is well knowne this doth for mine. What then shall neede any further exhortations, to cause me to doe as you would haue me, and to suffer persecution for my wealth, since I doe vnderstand what the same meaneth: and for the preseruing of mine estate, it is requisite and needfull to haue friendshippe with the Christians, if so be that you be also of the same minde, for that we are all equall in the losse, and also in the gaines.

God chasticeth mē sometime for theyr trial sometime for their offences.

For this talke of the kings, they were all sorrie that had giuen him counsell to go forward in these warres, since that they perceiued that his intent was to leaue the same, and haue friendship with the Captaine Generall. These therefore would forthwith haue aunswered, but the Prince Nabeadarin bidde preuent them, who was sorrie for these warres commenced, and spake thus loking vppon them all.

The Prince's Oration vnto the King & Nobles assembled

Since the king doth aske vs counsell what is best to be done in this matter, which standeth him so much vpon, I as one that most of all am greeued with this losse, and most desirous of his profite, will therefore bee the first that shall shewe herein my minde, and what I doe thinke thereof. In that which you saye, that oftentimes the Pagodes in the time of the persecutions that we do receiue will

Digitized by Google

„ will commaund vs to doe that which they will haue vs,
„ ſo we ought to vnderſtande them, although therefore in
„ theſe warres it appeareth that it goeth very euill with vs,
„ and in this they doe ſhew how much they are our frends,
„ truely I doe beleue the ſame, the rather for that we ought
„ not to beleue them that would haue a matter done with-
„ out reaſon, as it were to geue vs the victorie againſt thoſe
„ Chriſtians, and power to deſtroy the king of Cochin, vn-
„ to whom we haue done very much hurt, killynge the laſte
„ yeare his Princes and almoſt all his men, ſetting of Co-
„ chin a fire, and deſtroying his countrey, from whence
„ we hunted him away, with his great diſcredite, diſpoſſes
„ him of his kingdome & ſubiects, ſo that al they for the feare
„ they had of vs did leaue him, yea his owen frendes for ſoke
„ him, & went againſt him, & all for our ſake. And aboue all
„ theſe euils the which he did not deſerue, for ỹ he was not in
„ any fault, we would yet proceed further, vtterly to deſtroy
„ him. What hath he done? Did hee procure to take anye
„ mans countrey from him? No. In friendſhip did he vſe
„ himſelfe traiterouſly? Neither. Did he commaunde the
„ Marchantes that they ſhould not come to Calicut? Neither.
„ Did he thē ſome worſe thing ſince he did nothing of theſe?
„ Nothing at all. What therefore ſeeth for ỹ he did receiue into
„ his countrey the Chriſtians which being driuen out of Ca-
„ licut, went to ſeeke him out, as he was deſirous to encreaſe
„ and enpeople his Citie, and to augment hys eſtate and ri-
„ ches: Shall we therefore deſtroy him being our friend, as
„ an enemie? With this right doe the Pagodes helpe vs to
„ take the honor, riches and credite from the right owner? It
„ cannot be ſo, for that they be righteous and iuſt, and ther-
„ fore they will not help vs againſt thoſe Chriſtians which
„ were ſlayne, robbed, and thruſt out of Calicut, and were
„ there receiued vnder ſafeconduct from the king, comminge
„ to his porte before any others, and not geuing cauſe wher-
„ fore they ſhould receiue ſo many iniuries. If wee doe it
„ for that they laide hande vpon a Shippe of the Moores,
„ there is no reaſon why, for that the kinge commaunded

them

Digitized by Google

them to pay the same. And if ye had been assailed by them as ye were by me, the Portes should have paid for that they had done: that very well, for if they had been punished it would not have appered, ỹ the king had been in no fault of ỹ iniury they had done. And this had been sufficient to have confirmed the friendship of the Christians with him, & this also would have been a thing convenient, to have kept them in Calicut from going to cochin, to have there settled a trade, whom the king through euill councell hath trauayled so much to take them, as though they were theeues that had robbed him of his goode, they being so good, so gentle, so valyant as we see, and withall so gratefull of the benefite they doe receiue. For the receiuing of them as ỹ king of Mylinde did, they gaue ouer two ships laden with gold, the which they had taken from a Cousin of his. If these men were theeues, as the Portes doe say they are, those were pieces not to be left. You know how rich a present they brought to the king, and what riche merchandise they brought, and how much golde and siluer. Those fishermen which they did carrie away naked, did retourne againe all apparailed. If then we were friends, how surely should we liue: ỹ what profit should the king haue, if we had amitie with them. I do not speak of ỹ ship ỹ carried ỹ Elephants which was giuen him: when all ỹ pieces did passe by these theeues hands, the which they left. These were seruices to be thankfully receiued, giuing occasion to vs to gratifie thē in like sort, and to be glad to haue them for our friends, & since we did put them alwaye when they had nēede of vs, now that we haue nēede of them, let it not be thought euil, to conclude a peace with them, for that the wars we make against them, we make the same against our selues. They are vpon the Sea of more power then we are, as you may well see the same by the long time they haue defended this passage, and with what power of men, and also what destruction they hade brought vppon vs, and are like to doe, since that our Countrey lyeth nere to the water side, and that with our owne losse, we haue well seene the truth.

Amongst other vertues gratefulnes cōmended.

Digitized by Google

" Therfore let it go no further, but let vs ſeeke ſome remedie
" to haue a peace concluded amongſt vs: for if we haue not, ỹ
" port or harbour of Calecut will be vtterly vndone, & the king
" will be like to loſe all his rents. This doth concerne him
" more then al ỹ friendſhip of ỹ Moores, which haue no other
" reſpect but only to their owne profit, & not to the kings, &
" theſe be they that do giue councell to make theſe warres.

How the councell of the prince Nabeadarin was gainſaid, & how a certain Moore of Calecut did inuent the making of certein caſtles of timber, with the which they might lay the carues aboord ca. 69

THe king of Calecut all this while gaue great eare to ỹ which ỹ prince his brother had ſaid, & immediatly anſwered ỹ he was in ỹ fault, as touching ỹ which was paſt, & had repented himſelfe to haue taken ỹ enterpriſe in hand. And therfore he deſired them al, to enter into councel with his brother, & to take ſome good order for ỹ concluding of peace vp vs: which was not wel thought of by ỹ Lord of Repelin, for ỹ he was cõfederate with ỹ Moores to hinder ỹ ſame, & after ỹ the king had ended his talke, he ſpake in this maner following. According as ỹ Malabars are coſtant, ſo I do well beleeue, ỹ frõ hence forth they wil not haue thee in any reputation, if thou ſhuldeſt do as thou ſaid, for ỹ they would impute ỹ ſame rather to cowardnes, then to any reuelatiõ or forewarning of ỹ Pagodes. This is a matter not wel to be thought of, much leſſe thẽ to be ſpoke of amongſt perſons of honor as here are, & with ſo great a power, with hope of many more if there were need: for al ỹ noble men of ỹ Malabars are redy for ỹ ſame, hauing great cõfidence in thy valiantneſſe, & therfore did chooſe thee to be head of this war. And now, wilt thou leaue ỹ ſame without receiuing any hurt in thy perſon, with ỹ which thou mightſt excuſe the ſame, not to die in thy demaund. But returning whole, & with many of thine whole, what wil they ſay but ỹ for ỹ feare of ſo few ſtrangers thou giueſt ouer ỹ thou haſt begun ſo great a heat, & that thou runneſt away not being ouercome? With this thou ſhalt loſe thy credit ỹ thou haddeſt with all men, which ſince it is ſo, were thou not better die, then to liue diſhonored? I maruel much ỹ the prince

The Lord of Repelins anſwere to the prince in the councel houſe.

did

did not consider this, which is ỹ principal matter ỹ he should
make reckoning of, as one ỹ both esteeme this vnder, ỹ did
also esteeme ỹ same, do not counsel ỹ king to giue ouer the
wars, although I should see ỹ Pagodes command thee, for lo-
ther death is to be wished, then such obediēce. Go forwards
therfore in these wars, for so ỹ Pagodes wold haue thee do,
& do not contrary vnto this aduise. The Moores ỹ vier pre-
sent hearing al this talk, which was to their conset, did fur-
ther ỹ same as much as in thē lay, setting forward ỹ king,
praising him to be inuincible, laieng before him ỹ infamy he
should incur, if he did leaue ỹ wars: they offred him more o-
uer their persons & goods towards ỹ same, alleaging ỹ in-
creasing of his rents with their trade, plency of victuals in
his city with their being there, declaring also ỹ old friend-
ship they haue had with him, & how they were become na-
turall inhabitants of his country, with many other things,
vnto ỹ which ỹ king wold not answere, neither yet his bro-
ther, for ỹ al those kings & Lords did help ỹ Moores aduise,
& so it was concluded ỹ the wars should go forward. And for
ỹ it had gone with ỹ king so euil in ỹ fore, they found a
new inuention to lay the caruels a bord, which a certeine
Moore of Repelin made called Cogeal, who had ben a tra-
uailer, & sone vnderstood inuentions deuised. And for ỹ cause ha-
uing a pregnant wit, he muēted a castle to be made of tim-
ber, built vpon two boats or lighters, placing two beames
crosse wise ouer ỹ forepart of the said boats, & the fierne or
poope of ỹ boats to be as broad as ỹ castle long, ỹ which ca-
stle was made square, & vpon those beams were other pla-
ced, so high as a chāber from a hall, & in euery square were
quarters of timber thick set together, of ỹ height of a lance,
or little lesse, mortaled in ỹ said beams, & nailed with great
yron nails, & in ỹ bodies of ỹ quarters of timber thre holes
made, through ỹ which went bars of yron to ỹ to fight the
castle seemed a strong thing. In this castle might 40. men
be wel placed, besides certein peces of ordinance, so that in
this wise this castle might passe ỹ riuers, & w grapnils tovn
w ỹ caruels, which being vse ỹ king desired ỹ sight therof, &
whē he had seen ỹ same, did not only praise his wit, but also

The dissi-
muling
words of
ỹ Moores
to ỹ king.

rewarded him very largely, and by the ſame paterne commaunded other ſquuen to be made, that vpon them the Carvells might pitpend their times, & occupie themſelues, thinking that euen ſo it would be.

Of the great alteration there was in Cochin, about theſe Caſtles, and what pollicie the Captaine found to defend the Caruell from them. Chap. 70.

Immediatly after, was the Captaine generall aduertiſed by eſpies that he had ſent of theſe caſtles, and that the enimies were alſo making in readineſſe certein fireworkes, ỳ therwith they might burne ỳ caruells, & if they could not burne ỳ ſame, ỳ then with theſe caſtles, they might lay the ſaid Caruel aboard: As ſoone as the dwellers & inhabitants of Cochin heard of theſe caſtles, they were therwith greatly afeard, leaſt ỳ the enimyes would take Cochin, & with that did make themſelues in a readineſſe to flie from thence, for the which the king of Cochin was very ſad, ſuppoſing ỳ indeed with theſe Caſtles, his enimies would take his country from him. After this, certeine of the inhabitants of Cochin went to ỳ Captaine generall, to aſke him whether he was able with his caruells to defend himſelfe from theſe caſtles. Wherupon the Captaine anſwered & aſkt of them, wherefore they demanded ỳ queſtion, ſeeing ỳ they did well know, that from a greater power then this, he had made them flie with broken heads, & ſo he doubted not, but he would doo againe. With this anſwere ỳ inhabitants of Cochin were fully ſatiſfied, & ſo minded not to remoue themſelues from thence, vntill ſuch time the battell were fought. The Captaine generall for to encourage them the more, commaunded before them all to pitch a long ſtaffe in the ground, the which was made ſharp at ỳ one end. This ſame amongſt the Malabars is called Calue, vpon ỳ which they do execute iuſtice of death vnto the poore

A Calue, and what the meaning therof is.

Digitized by Google

powrest & vilest people of the country: insomuch ỳ if they say to a Naire, Naire Caluete, they take the same for a greater reproch then any other. This Caluete being pitched on this sort, the Captaine generall did then sweare, to spit vpon the same the king of Calicut, if so be that he did sight with him, & so forthwith he commaunded in dispraise of the king of Calicut, ỳ all his men should say with a lowd voice, Samurin Caluete. At this sight the inhabitants meruailed to see ỳ stoutnesse of ỳ Captaine, & so minded to remaine & keep the towne. But for all this, the Captaine Generall was inwardly moued in spirit, for feare ỳ indeed they wold lay his caruels a bord, & that for lacke of men. Howbeit ỳ better to defend them from ỳ same, he commanded to be made a certeine Caniso, ỳ which was made wt certeine masts of ships, ioyned the one to the other, & bound with great bolts and hoops of yron. These masts wer of eight fathom of length, & as many of breadth, & were placed from ỳ Caruels a good stones throw. And for ỳ the eb nor yet the flood should carry the same away, there were laid out fiue great ankors, three of them vpon the flood, & the other vpon the eb, ỳ made the same the surer. And for that the Caruels should remaine so high as ỳ castles, one Peter Rafel considering these deuises, deuised also to encounter with the height of those castles, to make certeine turrets of halfe masts, which were set vpright, and made fast a bord the caruell, in the which turrets seuen or eight men might fight at pleasure in each of them. This being done, one morning before day ther came to visit the Captain general the king of Cochin, of whose cōming the Captaine was very glad, for ỳ he had heard how fearfull he was, & therfore he gaue him a good countenance, yet for all this, the king could dissemble no lōger, but presently his eies did run downe with water, & with ỳ he embraced the Captaine general, & cōmanded those noble men ỳ came with him to do ỳ like, which was done with so sorrowfull a countenance, as though it were ỳ last time ỳ they should meet. Afterward ỳ king did apart himself with ỳ captaine & some of our men, & as a man out of his wits, said vnto him,

Digitized by Google

The king of Cochins wordsto the Captaine generall.

The King of Galycut hath a great power, and we are but few, and that without any hope that I haue to defend Cochin, or any of my people, who beſides are ready to runne away if thou be ouercome. And ſince that I am vndone, I requeſt thee, that thou doe prouide for thine owne ſafetie, whilſt thou haſt time, for that afterwards, I doubt thou ſhalt not haue the ſame: and therewith, as though he were ſtopped in the throte, he ſpake no more.

The aunſwer that the captain generall made to the King of Coching.

The Captaine generall ſhewing himſelfe to be angry with this ſpeach, aunſwered him ſomewhat with choler, aſking him what weakneſſe or cowardneſſe he had ſeene in him, that he ſhould will him to prouide for his ſafetie? And further ſaid, that there or in what place ſoeuer he was, he was moſt aſſured to defend himſelfe from the King of Calicut, and alſo doubted not but to giue him the ouerthrow, notwithſtanding the great power he brought. And diddeſt not thou tell me (quod he) all theſe times paſt, that God did fight for the Portingales, but now how doſt thou doubt of the ſame? I haue a hope in God, that to morow thou ſhalt ſee the King of Calycut put in that Caluete, and of this I doe not doubt, if he doe tarry me, neither yet thou oughteſt to haue any doubt, if thou wouldeſt thinke vpon the victories that God hath giuen me ſo oftentimes, the King of Calycut hauing the ſame aduantage that now he hath. This thou oughteſt to beleeue, and not that which the Moores of Cochin do tell thee, for y they all doe not loue vs, neither yet the alteration of the Mayres ſhould make thee apalde, which are afeard of euery puffe of winde. Repent thy ſelfe therefore of that thou haſt told me, and diſpaire not, but returne with good courage to Cochin, and there alſo to comfort and harten thy people, ſhew thy ſelfe ſtrengthened, & ſtay thy ſubiects from going away, and let me alone with this Paſſage, for I will giue thee a good accompt thereof.

The King minding not to encreaſe his choler, did ſhew himſelfe recomforted with his words and comfortable anſwere, truſting that we would defend the Paſſage, according to the valyaunt mindes he had founde in vs, and in our

Digitized by Google

our Captaine generall: which he did affirme without any doubt of the defence therof. The Nayres, and all the people of Cochin, vpon their alteration and determination, they made for their departing, beleeuing yet that our men should be ouerthrowen, did therevpon prouoke the Nayres to runne awaye, but yet nenertheleſſe they would not.

How the King of Calycut did giue the Battaile vnto the Captaine generall with his caſtells, & how they were all ouerthrowen. cap. 71.

The King of Cochin being departed, the Captaine generall went to his Caruell, shewing himselfe grieued greatly, to see the King so faint hearted, the which might bee the occasion that Cochin might be dissinhabited, which he feared very much: and being desirous to suppe with his men, thether came Lorenzo Moreno, with those of the Factorie, with whom he was accustomed to come, for (as I haue said) there was neuer any found in the battel of our men, that the enimies could ouercome: The Supper being done, they went to rest themselues till midnight, and being confessed and absolued by the Vicar, the Captaine generall said vnto them.

The Captain generals Orati on to his company

Maisters and my friends, I am very merie & glad that you doe remember the principall thing, which is your soules, for that I doe well knowe, that with this remembrance God will haue vs in his high & glorious memorie, to giue vs the victory against our enimies, not onely for the satisfaction of our troubles, but also for the increasing of his holy and Catholike faith, and that the King of Cochin and his people might vnderstand, that our God is a true God, and mightie aboue all mightes, and that hee doeth not fayle those which doe put their confidence and trust in his name. As for the King of Cochin, you did well see him yesterdaye howe sadde and heauie and

,, and without hope he went away distrusting in the victo-
,, ry, which God I doubt not hath promised vs, making sure
,, account, that we were all lost, and vtterly cast away, per-
,, swading me withall, that I should in time prouide for mine
,, owne safetie. Surely I did neuer finde in him so much
,, feare, nor yet so great cowardnesse, the occasion therof was,
,, that they heard that the power of the king of Calicut was
,, much greater then it was before. And although it were so
,, great as they doe thinke, yet farre greater without all com-
,, parison is our God, and that haue you well seene in the
,, helps past that he hath sent vs, and euen so now do I hope
,, that he will likewise helpe vs and send vs the victory.
,, And with this hope let vs assuredly trust to ouercome the
,, enimyes, for he will maintaine the honour that we haue
,, gotten, and from hence forth will so encrease the same, that
,, we should remaine in this worlde for lightes of valiaunt
,, men, and for the same be so feared in the Indias, that nei-
,, ther the king of Calicut nor any else will dare set vpon vs:
,, and the honour being gotten, we shall be assured of rest for
,, the troubles we haue had.

As he had ended they sayd all, that without the victorye they would not liue. And at this time which was two houres after midnight, some of the Ordinaunce of the Nacks of the king of Calycut beganne to discharge, making theyr way towards the Captaine Generall: and the king himselfe went by land, being accompanied with more then thirtie thousand men, with his field peeces, as his vse was, and with great hope y he should giue vs the ouerthrow, & with this double pride, much more then he euer had, he came forward. The Lord of Repelyn marched before with certeine men that should make rampyres of earth in the point of Arraul, for a defence for our enimyes in the battell.

He brought with him great noises & cries, with great pleasure and daunting, the which the Captaine generall diddeheare, and went verie secretly a lande, and placed himselfe in the very point where the enimies should come, the which he

Mē make warres to the intēt to liue in peace.

Digitized by Google

he did defend that the enimies should not make there any rampyers, about the which our men killed some of them. This being knowne to the king of Calicut, that the Captaine Generall came thether to meete with him, hee commaunded his souldiers with a stout stomacke to set vppon him and take him alive, the better to reuenge himselfe on him at his pleasure. About this there was a great skirmish and many of the enimies were slaine without taking of the Captaine Generall, neither yet could they make theyr rampiers. As the morning came on which was the Ascention day, the other Fleete did appeare, ỹ which was not far off, and by this, the Captaine generall was retired vnto his boates, but it was with great trouble, because of the great multitude of the enimies which came vpon him: howbeit he imbarked both himselfe and his men without lacking any of them, but there were of the enimies many slaine and hurt. The point being now cleere & vnfurnished, the enimies came and placed themselues there, and then they began to shoote off their Ordinaunce at vs, to the which wee did aunswere with ours, doing them great hurt therewith, for that all our shot went amongst the enimies, where they lay open, and our men were well fenced, therefore their Ordinaunce could doe vs no hurt. The king of Calicut seeing this, sent word to his Fleete that they should rowe a pace, and come to helpe and deliuer him from the daunger and feare that our men did put him in. The Fleete being come, it was a fearefull sight to beholde them, for that there was deliuen before them certeine raffes, the which went alwaies burning, with intent to set the Caruells on fire, and after them an hundred and ten Paraos full of men & ordinance, & many of them cheined together, and after them a hundred Catures in the same manner, and foure score Tonis de coxia ancha, and in each of them thirtie men, besides theyr Ordinaunce, and the eight caruells in keeping of these, the which stode hard by the point, for that the ebbe was not as yet altogether entered. The enimies came with great clamor, making great laromes and cries, and playing vpon instru-

The king of Calicut being in danger sendeth for succor to ỹ rest of his fleete.

Digitized by Google

ments accounting vs as ouercome already, and with this, they ſhot off ſo many peeces of Ordinance as it was wonderfull to ſee, and with their fagots which they brought before them burning, they drew very neere to the Canizo, which was placed before the Caruells, and therefore they could not come to ſet the Caruels a fire, neither any other of all the Fleete. Wherefore, all thoſe that went before, did ioyne with the Canizo, and therewith did giue vs battaile, & without all doubt they had cloſed with vs at this time, if this defence had not bene. In this ſodaine fight which was very great, the battel indured a good while, vntill ſuch time the ebbe came on, and at this time the enimies receiued great hurt, not onely in their Fregates that were torne in peeces and ſunke, but alſo many of their men that were ſlaine and hurte. The Ebbe being come, the Paraos with their Caſtles did put off from the poynt, and to the ends they ſhould goe the ſwifter, they were rowed with boats. Theſe came right towards the Caruells, and in the greateſt of them all went fortie fighting men, and in the other of the middle ſort in each of them fiue and thirtie, and in the leſſer ſort thirtie men. All theſe were bowmen & ſhot, and beſides that they did carrie Ordinaunce, and ſwode all abroad, which did ſhewe ſo terrible and monſtrous a front, as was fearful to be ſeene, the rather being ſo great a fleet, in compariſon of our ſmall power to defend them, we hauing but two Caruells & two boats. But this was ỳ day wherein God did well ſhew, the great regard he had to preſerue vs, for that neither the ſight of ſo many men, and ſo many ſorts of wayes whereby they had compaſſed and beſet vs, neither yet ſuch a Fleete, that was ſo great and mightye, with the fearefull cryes that the Enimies did make, nor the terrible thundering of the Ordinance, could any wayes diſcourage or make vs afeard. The greater of the Caſtles being come hard to this defence, did then ſhote off all his ordinance at the Caruels, & the Captaine generall commaunded to ſhote at the ſame with a Saker, the which cauſed the ſaid Caſtle to ſtand wauering, but yet did

them

Digitized by Google

them little harme, neither yet with another péece that they shot off forthwith, with the which Captaine generall was so sad, that he lifted vp his eyes vnto heauen, saieng: Lord, doe not retourne my sinnes to my face at this time, and this he said with such a loude voyce, that some there were that heard the same. In the meane while came the other Paraos, which did set themselues right equal with the first, & with the comming of these, the battell did increase more and more very stoutly on all parts. Their arrowes came so thicke, which made so great a shadow, that sometimes ther appeared neither heauen nor earth, with ỳ great smoke of their Ordinaunce. The Captaine generall did tourne, and commaund to shoote at the great Castle the Saker againe, & as with ỳ other shot past, they had somwhat shaken their yron workes which were not very strong, so with the same shot they presently brake, & after ỳ the yron workes were thus broken, some of their beams being likewise caried away, with certéine of their men slaine, with ỳ same our men gaue a great cry, & the Captaine generall falling down on his knées, gaue God great thankes, & returning to shoot the Saker againe, did carrie away another row of beams, with many more slaine and hurt, and the Ordinaunce being shotte off againe, it was all torne in péeces in a small space, and so the enimies went with their Castle further of, but the others remayned there fighting very stoutly. And after this, both parts endured more trouble all the day following, then in all the battells that were past: but in the ende, we did so much hurt vnto their Castles, and sunke and rent so many of their Paraos in péeces, ỳ the enimies could not abide the same, & therfore they shrank thence. The fight did endure till euensong time, & began in ỳ morning: of the enimies wer many slain, as afterward was séene in ỳ water, & of vs none, nor any hurt, but only bruised with a shot which went through ỳ Admiral, ỳ bullet went among many that were there, but they receiued no harme.

The praier of a distressed minde in the bitternesse of heart.

The Captaine generall séeing the enimies went their waye, followed them in their Boates, and such Paraos as

Digitized by Google

as he had, shoting alwayes at those that were vppon the point Arraul, with the king, and with the force of their Ordinaunce made them ruune away, leauing behinde them slaine three hundred and thirtie men. This being done, he then returned to his Caruells, where that euening came to visit him the Prince of Coching in the behalfe of the king, who sent to excuse himselfe that he could not come to visit him in his owne person. But he sent him againe word, that he wold receiue no discharge, vntill such time he knew his heuines was past, but praied him frō hence forth to beleeue better in God, for that the daungerous daye of the Castles was past, and he remained in the passage as he did before, all safe, and in readinesse to serue him. The selfe same date came to visit him certeine noble men, of those that were of the king of Cochings side, with whome there was made great triumph for this victorie: and likewise there went to see him many Moores Merchants which brought him great presents, supposing to get of him thereby great friendship. He receiued them very gently, praieng them to be true subiects to the king of Coching, for thereby they should finde him assured at any time whensoeuer he might stand them in any stede, whereupon they faithfully promised so to do, & to binde them the more, he made them very great cheere. Also the next day in the morning the king of Coching came to visit him, who imbraced him with as great gladnesse as could be deuised, saieng that he did wel performe ỳ which he had promised, in giuing the king of Calycut the ouerthrowe. But vnto this he answered, that he had not performed all his promise, since that he did not put him on the Caluete, but he was not in fault thereof, for that the king kept himselfe alwayes farre from him. He declared also to the king diuerse other matters of pleasure, which the king answered in like manner, praising very much his valiantnes, & that he had wel seene ỳ God did fight for vs, asking of him forgiuenesse for ỳ distrust he had in him, & how greatly he was bound to succour him; declaring also that the affaires of Portingale were very great, and confessing lykewise

Digitized by Google

vnto that he through his worthinesse had made him king. After this victorie the inhabitants of Cochin did cast off the feare they had of the king of Calycut, in such sort, that neuer from thence forth they stode in anye dread of him, neither yet made account of his habilitye.

Of the counsell which the king of Calycut tooke of his brother, and how hee was gaine-saide: and also by what pollicie & meanes the king of Calycut sought to kill the Captaine generall. Chap. 72.

THE king remained greatly ashamed and very sad, for that at the same time he could not ouerthrowe the Captaine Generall, the rather because he neuer accounted any thing more certeine, then to ouer come him in that conflict, because of the Castles which he had prepared for his confusion. And now leauing a side all hope euer to haue the victorie, he desired to haue with vs no more warres, and therefore he called before him into his tents, all those kings and noble men that came to helpe him, and sayd thus vnto them.

YOV doe well se how little our power profiteth vs against these men, and how little our pollicies preuaileth since they doe not regard vs, and would neuer giue ouer the passage, notwithstanding the greate power we had against them. The like account also they make of vs in their feastes, and passtimes when we goe against them, as though wee were the fewer, and they the more, and as though the land which they are in were theirs, & we were the Christians, whereby it appeareth, they alwayes make account of the victorie for certeine, which either they obteine by witchcrafts, or else their God doth fight for them, which cannot bee otherwise, considering the great victories they haue had

The king of Calicuts oration vnto his noble men.

Digitized by Google

„ againſt vs, and the greate hurt that we haue receiued of
„ them. Wherfore I ſuppoſe that God would it ſhould be ſo,
„ for the litle iuſtice ỹ is obſerued in theſe wars, as hath wel
„ appered in the beginning of the ſame. And if I had ben wel
„ aduiſed, it ſhuld not haue gone ſo faire forward, but in the
„ end I am in the fault, and not they, and ſince it is ſo, wee
„ haue therin no right cauſe, neither cannne gette any thing
„ by our ſtrength. Let vs therfore giue it ouer, & deſire no more
„ to haue Cochim, for that God doth fauour theſe men, ſince
„ wel you ſee, there is no power in the Indias that can offend
„ vs ſo long, we being ſo ſtrong, but theſe dogs, of whom I
„ am afraid, ỹ they will ſubdue the Indias, according to the
„ acts that they haue done, and the credit that they haue got-
„ ten, eſpecially in Malabar. And that this miſhap may go no
„ further, I thinke it ſhoulde be conuenient to procure their
„ friendſhip, & alſo it is time to get vs away, for ỹ the winter
„ commeth on, & the riuers doe increaſe, & theſe men do ouer-
„ runne all: and this is certeine, ỹ if the wars indure, they will
„ coſte hether & inforce vs to depart with our loſſe & diſho-
nor. Now ỹ firſt that he aſked councell of what was neceſ-
ſary to be done, was his brother Nabeadarin, who being an-
gry with the king that he wold neuer follow his councel, &
leaue the warres, ſaide: that now he knewe to his coſt
what he had told him of vs: & ſince in time he wouldе not
know it, he aſked him what it ſhuld now profit him for his
honour and credit, ſince ỹ then when opportunitie ſerued he
refuſed his councell, but now he willed him to do what he
ſhuld thinke good, for he could not do amiſſe. The king bee-
ing ſomwhat broken of his pride, (calling him brother) ſaid
that now there was no time to anſwere him after ſuch
ſort, but to tell him his opinion what he thought beſt. The
prince anſwered ỹ we were venterous, & alwaies remained
ſo aſſured of the victory, vpon our experienced ſtrength and
good fortune, albeit our power were much leſſe, ſo ỹ he greatly
doubted we would none of his friendſhip. And for thee to
offer ỹ ſame, ſaid he to ỹ king, & they to refuſe it, wold be no
leſſe diſhonor vnto thee, then the often ouerthrowes ỹ thou

The coun
ſell that
the king
of Cali-
cuts bro-
ther gaue
him touch

haſt

Digitized by Google

haſt receiued. And ſince by the prefered friendſhip, we can not get ſo much as we ſhould loſe if they refuſe ẏ ſame, it were beſt therefore not to procure it, but to defer it, & make peace with the Captaine general that commeth ẏ nert yere from Portingale, who conſidering howe little the wars will profit him, & not being aſſured of good ſucceſſe therein, will be the gladder to make peace with thée, & therfore that it may not be thought that we run awaye for feare, let vs ſtay & not depart, vntill ſuch time it ſhuld be thought, that ẏ neceſſitie of the winter did inforce vs hence, & then may we wel talke of peace, when poſſible the Captaine general wil willingly accept the ſame, doubting that his good fortune may chaunge. And to prouoke & giue occaſion the rather to haue his friendſhip, let vs giue him no more battels in the meane time, ſince it ſerueth to no purpoſe, but to the great loſſe and confuſion of our men. ing the making of peace with the captaine generall.

This councell of Nabeadarin was reproued by the kings and noble men which were there then aſſembled, & eſpecially of the Lord of Repelyn, which ſaid that the king ought not to goe awaye, neither for the greatneſſe of the winter that ſhould come, nor yet for the loſſe of his men, but rather to continue, giuing vs manye battailes, vntill ſuch time he did take vs, and not onely procured the deſtruction of vs in Cochin, but alſo of thoſe that were in Cananor and Coulan. And that immediarly it were expedient they ſent men of credit with letters to affirme, that they had boarded our Caruells with their Caſtles, and had alſo ſlaine vs all, and taken our ſayd Caruells, and therefore that they ſhould kill all thoſe that were there, as they had promiſed. To the ſame effect therefore the king did write immediatly and the Moors alſo, but there was no credite giuen to the ſame, for that there was other newes ſent before, and therefore the laſt was taken for falſe. Neuertheleſſe for all that, by the induſtry of the Moores the which did dwel in thoſe two townes, our men were in great danger, and durſt not come out of their Factoryes, and in Coulan there was one ſlaine, but in the other places none, for A ſubtile deuice by meanes of a lye to haue brought our mē to deſtructiō but it toke no effect

Digitized by Google

for after waro messengers were sent from Calycut to the Gentiles, that our men were slaine, and what was had done. For which cause the king of Calycut was aunswered that they would not kill our men, vntill such time the Captaine Generall was taken, and that he had first giuen him the ouerthrowe, which being done, they would conclude with him. This being come to the knowledge of the Lorde of Repelyn, both he and the Moores did perswade the king to fight another battell with the Captaine Generall, the which he would willingly not haue done, for that he was wearyed in his spirit, but he could not withstand them, and therefore commaunded the same to be giuen both by sea and lande. But in it he had like successe as before, so that more through the importunate desire of the Moores then of his owne will, he gaue in his owne person another battell with his Castles, with many more men and vessells then in the other before. This battell endured longer then the other, in which also the enimyes were ouercome, and receiued farre greater losse then euer they did before. With this victorye that we had gotten, the inhabitaunts of Cochin remained sure from all their enimies, and so likewise did the king, whom afterward came to visite the Captaine generall, being brought in a chaire, with farre greater estate then euer he came before, since the first beginning of all the warres. This being knowne in the campe of the enimies, the kings and noble men that were with the king of Calicut, take occasion to say vnto him that he shoulde not consent, in especially hauing such a greate power as he hadde there present, that the king of Cochin shoulde haue him in so small reputation, as thereby to iudge himselfe free from him, out of his danger. To the which the king of Calicut made answere, that the king of Cochin had great reson to do that which he had done, in especially knowing his greate power and camp, and yet perceiuing that he could not giue him the ouerthrowe. And since that his euill fortune was such, he desired them not to wish him to go forward in these wars, for that he knewe well and was fully perswa-

An aunswere which the king of Calicut made vnto certein noble mē

ded,

Digitized by Google

ued, that continuing the same, he shoulde alwayes receiue the losse, and run daily into greater danger, as by the feare thereof it was apparaunt. And therefore he requested them all to let him alone by himselfe, who so being, did imagine againe what course he might best take to reuenge himselfe.

And after that he came aboord, he called for certeine of his Nayres, in whom he had reposed all his truste, commanding them to go to Coching with some dissimulation, and there to trauaile all that they could to kill the Captaine generall, and all such of our men as they could meete withall. And as the Naires are men inconstant, and cannot keepe counsel longer then they are bethinking themselues therof, therfore immediatly their intent was knowne to the Captaine generall, who from thence forward had a better regard to himselfe, and vnto the rest of his companye then he had before. And the better to take those Naires which came as Spyes thether, he appointed therunto two companies of ỹ Naires of Colletay, commaunding the one to keepe diligentlye along the shore, and the other along the riuer, who watched by quarters both by day and night. Whilest this diligence was vsed, the Captaine Generall had knowledge that this spy was a Naire of Coching, and of the house or flocke of the Leeros, who had attendant vppon him certeine Nayres that were strangers, which appeared to be lyke those of Calicut.

Nowe hauing certeine knowledge hereof, he so handled the matter, and in such order, that forthwith he tooke them all prisoners, and being brought before him, he commaunded them to be cruelly whipped in the presence of those Naires of Coching, and afterwards to bee hanged. The inhabitaunts of Coching seeing this, requested the Captaine Generall to giue them some other punishment since that they were Nayres, and not to shewe them so great extremitie, but notwithstanding hee would not graunt vnto anye other punishment, for that they had deserued the same.

Digitized by Google

The Oration of certeine captains vnto their generall for his better aduiſe in administration of iuſtice.

Then all his Captaines ſayde vnto him, that firſt and before all he ſhould call to remembrance, the greate troubles that the King of Coching hadde ſuſteined for the onelye mainteining of them, and alſo howe much it ſhoulde grieue him to heare ſaye, that ſuch were hanged in his Countrie without his conſent.

Alſo it woulde giue an occaſion for ſuch noble men as were with him, to ſaye that he is a king but for a while, ſince that his iuriſdiction is nowe taken from him. And forasmuch as hetherto he had vſed him alwayes with reuerence, they wiſhed that nowe at the ende he ſhoulde haue him in a greater eſtimation then euer he hadde before.

The Captaine Generall hauing conſidered theyr reaſons, did allowe of theyr good councell herein, and cauſed thoſe Naires to be ſent for, that were gone to execution, of the which there were two halfe dead, but thoſe that were liuing hee ſent to the king of Coching, aduertiſing him howe that they hadde deſerued death, and alſo the cauſe why hee hadde not commaunded them to be hanged.

The King hearing this, toke the ſame in greate honour and eſtimation, that they were ſent him, and eſpecially for that there were preſent ſundrye of the noble men of his Countrie, and of other places, yea, and ſhames alſo, of the chiefeſt that dwelt in Coching, which did not lette to ſaye vnto the king to aſſwage him withall, that euil men were they that commaunded and did not obeye.

But from hence forthe the Captaine Generall hadde ſuch intelligence, that the ſubtile dealinges of the king of Cale[illegible] ſhould take very ſmall effect againſt him.

How

How the king of Calicut of pure heauinesse for the ill successe he had in the warres, did put himselfe into a Torcull, and within a small time after came foorth therof. chap. 73.

THe time being now ended, and the winter beginning to increase, the Captaine generall thought that it would be some cause that the king of Calicut would not tarrie there long. And therfore he was fully minded to set vpon him at the remouing of his camp, for that by experience he knew the small valour of his enimies, by such victories as he had gotten in times past, which did therefore animate him the more thereunto, thinking that at such a time he might doe him much harme. And being in a readinesse to vncheine his Galles, he was presently informed that the king of Calicut was reforming a new his Castles, and preparing in a readinesse a greater Fleete then euer he had before, that hee might giue him therewith once more the battaile. This was but a feeing newes that was commaunded to be giuen out by the king of Calycut, who did surmise that at the raising of his Campe, which hee was minded to doe, and so goe his waye, the Captaine Generall would sette vpon him.

A false arome giuen forth by the Calicutians to terrifie the Portingals withall.

And therefore hee determined, that his departure should be so secretlye done, that no man should knowe thereof but onelye Nabeadarin. For this cause therefore he gaue out, that hee would giue the battaile in the passage of Paluyte, and also in the Foorde both together, to the ende the Captaine Generall might occupie himselfe in defending them both, and hee himselfe the better steale awaye, as hee dyde: but hee gotte nothing thereby, more then hee hadde gotten before.

Digitized by Google

After all this, on Saterday in the Euening, which was Saint Iohns euen, on which day they gaue out, that they would giue the battaile, there appeared the whole army of the enimyes as they were accuſtomed to ſhew themſelues. The Captaine Generall hoping of theyr comming, did tarrye there all that night, but in the morning he ſaw no likelyhood thereof, and meruailing what that ſhoulde meane, was informed by two Bramenes that the king of Calycut was gone with his whole power into Repelyn, and that at that preſent hée was there.

For this newes hée was very ſorrie, but yet for all that hée entered that preſent daye into Repelyn, where hée fought with many of his enimyes, ſlewe and hurt a greate number, and ſo returned to the paſſage, where he remained yet certeine dayes to enſure Coching the better, which was yet afeard of the King of Calycuts returning, fearing that he would not leaue this paſſage. Howbeit the Captaine Generall was well aſſured that he would not come there, by reaſon hée was fallen into ſuch reproch and ſhame, in the ſight of all men, becauſe of his great loſſes. So that immediatly after that he had paſt the riuers of Repelyn, he departed himſelfe with his noble men which had accompanied him in theſe warres, and ſaid vnto them with weeping eyes in this manner following.

the kings Oration, made to ſuch princes & noble meas came to aide him in theſe vvarres.

FOR a man that is without ſhame, as I am, it is not much to ſhewe theſe teares as I doe, the heauineſſe of my loſſe being ſuch, as fetcheth the ſame from my heart, with the which I am ſo troubled, that ſince it is ſo, that I cannot poe it in publike ſorte, I will goe into ſome place where I may do the ſame without any body that may ſée me. I haue alſo another griefe which troubleth mée beſyde ſome, ouer and beſides my diſhonour, which is, for that I am not able to reward you for all the greate good will and ſeruice you haue done mée in theſe warres, the which I take for ſo greate a dueтye, that if ſo be that I might ſée my ſelfe diſcharged of the ſame, I ſhould bée bet-

Digitized by Google

better contented, then with the getting of Cochin. But since it is not Gods pleasure that I shoulde get the victorie ouer it, which hath procured my dishonour, so is it not his pleasure and will that I poslesse the state of a king any longer, but rather for the amending of my sinnes will ende my lyfe in this Torcull, where I meane to continue vntill such time that God hath taken awaye this hatred, which hee hath conceiued against mee. And from this time forward you may dispose of your selues, and do what you shall thinke best with my countrie and subiectes. I doe not offer you my person, forsomuch as being a man so vnfortunate as I am, it shall not stand with your credite to require his companye, and with this speach hee ended his talke.

A Torcull is as much as with vs an hermitage, or such lyke pore kind of solitary religious place

But the Princes and Noble men woulde somewhat haue comforted him, and withdrawne him from this his determination, but it could not preuaile, for that he had fully bent himselfe to the contrary, and so with certeine of his Chaplaines he entered into this Torcull.

Now his mother hauing knowledge that he was there, shee sent him word, that for this his sodeine determination he remained as heauie and with as sorrowfull a heart as might bee. Informing him moreouer, that through this sodeine chaunce, there hath risen in Calycut a great alteration, for that from thence are gone and now are ready to go many ships full of merchants, and also that the citie is becomne wonderfully vnprouided of victualls, with the greate feare the inhabitants are in of the Christians: which is the occasion ther are no victualls brought thether. But no perswasion she layd, could withdraw him from these wars with the Christians, which from the beginning of the same was a great griefe vnto her: willing him also that in no case he shoulde returne vnto Calycut, vntill he might doe the same with his credit, which was cleane lost alreadie. And therefore shee counsailed him a while to forbeare, vntill such time he might recouer it againe, and that with victorie, yea, rather to lose all then to returne without it.

The Mothers message to the King of Calycut, being in the Torcull.

Where credit is impaired, it is better to lurke then to runne abroad with dishonour.

Digitized by Google

Wlith this meſſage the Kings beaminoſſe increaſed greatlye, and he ſent immediatelye for his Brother, to whome being come, he gaue him charge of the gouernment of his kingdome. But after that he came out of the ſayde Tauill, it was reſtored vnto him againe.

¶ How there came ſundry Kings & Princes of the Countrey to demaund peace of the Captaine generall: & alſo how there came vnto Coching many Moores of Calycut, to inhabite there. Chap. 74.

ALL theſe Kings and Noble men, which came to ſeeme ẏ king of Calient (after that he had placed himſelfe in the Tauil) remained a fewe dayes in Repelyn, tarrieng to ſee whether he did repent himſelfe of that which he had done, or not: and perceiuing ẏ contrary, each of them repaired towarde their Countreyes, whereof the moſt part of them lay there alongthe water ſide. And forſomuch as the Winter began to increaſe, and they fearing leaſt the Captaine generall would ouercome them all, hauing now loſt the hope they had to defend themſelues now as before time. Therefore they minded to procure as much as they could, to be friends and in peace with the Captaine generall. For the which intent as Mediatour for the ſame purpoſe, they ſent to the King of Coching, whom for that his condition and nature was very good, & without calling to remembraunce the iniuries that were paſt, which they had done vnto him, did vndertake to do the ſame. Sending them immediatly a ſafeconduct for their ſafe comming vnto Coching, from whence he went in their company to viſit the Captaine generall, whom at their meeting, he earneſtly requeſted

the goodnes of the King of Cochings nature noted in being a meane to procure

Digitized by Google

quested to receiue them as his friendes, who anſwered, that for his ſake he would ſo doe. Diuers other Princes alſo there were, that coulde not come, but yet notwithſtanding they ſent vnto him their Embaſſadours to conclude this peace likewiſe. Alſo ſundrye Moores of Calycut that were great Merchants, to the ends they might quietly vſe their trade, forſoke Calycut, & came to dwell at Coching, with the conſent of the Captaine generall. Others there were that went to Canahor and Coulan, ſo that the great Trade that was before in Calycut began ſodainly to fall. And for that the Moores of Calycut began in this ſorte to inhabite in Coching, therefore the Captaine generall would not leaue this paſſage, as alſo for that there came many & ſundry times Paraos from Calycut into the riuers to keep the ſame, by Nabeadarins commaundement. Howbeit the Captaine generall met with them and fought with them, and hurt many of his enimies. Moreouer, he oftentimes entered into the Lord of Repelyns Countrey to take Cattell for his prouiſion, & fought with many of his enimies, vpon whom he made great ſlaughter. One daye by chaunce our men met with certaine Tones of the enimies, the which were in a certaine ſtanding water, and carried them awey into the riuers, and made with the enimies a valyant and ſtout ſkirmiſh, in the which was ſlaine the greateſt parte of them, and not one of our men hurt. peace for his enimies.

After all this, the Lorde of Repelyn became the Captaine generalls friends, and came to viſite him, and brought him for a Preſent a great quantitie of Pepper, which he had in his Countrey. The Lord of Repelin, is alſo reconciled vnto the captain generall.

¶How Lope Suares de Meneſis departed for the Indias for captaine generall of the Fleete that went in the yeare of our Lorde, a. 1504. and what more paſt or euer he came to Anſadiua. cap. 75.

1504. The fiſte voiage to the Indias made by ỹ Portingales

IN the yeare of our Lorde. 1504. the king of Portingale hauing certeine knowledge, that the king of Calycut continued as yet in the warres, did therfore ſend to ſuccour our men with a Fleete of twelue great ſhippes, and appointed for Generall of the ſame, a Gentilman called Lope Suares de Meneſis, who in the time of king Don Iohn the ſecond, had bene Captaine in the Mina. The Captaines of the Fleet were theſe following.

Pedro de Mendoſa, Lionel Cotinuo, Triſtim de la Silua, Lope Mendus, de Vaſcon Cele, Lope de Abreo, Philipe de Caſtro, Alonſo Lopes de caſtro, Alonſo Lopes de la Coſta, Pero Alonſo, de Aguylar, Vaſco de la Siluero, Vaſco Caruallo, Pedro Dynes de Sutunell. All theſe were Gentlemen borne, and ſome were made Gentlemen by ſeruice. Theſe alſo carryed with them many valiant Souldiers, who being imbarked, and the Captaine Generall diſpatched, did depart from Lisborne the xvii. of Aprill in the ſelfe ſame yeare, and continuing theyr voiage on the ſecond day of May, they found themſelues right in their courſe to Cape Verde. Then ỹ Captaine generall hauing here all ỹ Fleete together, cauſed his Captaines, Maiſters, and Pilots, to aſſemble themſelues, vnto whome he ſpake in tence following. Willing them to call to remembraunce howe lately they had departed from portingale, for which cauſe it was requiſite that they were circumſpect and diligent, and not to fall into ſuch diſorders and extremities as hetherto they haue done, for not loking euery man vnto his charge, and not to ſuffer one ſhip leye the other a borde, as they haue done alreadie, whereby they ranne all into greate daunger. Alſo there were others he ſaid, that had no regard to keepe theyr right courſe, but diuidedly there were ſome that would go before, and others come after, and others by the winde, by meanes of which diſorder they might haue

The Captain generals oration vpon which he made to his captaines, maſters and Pilots.

Digitized by Google

caſt

cast away themselues. And the better to auoid these daungers, and to keepe the Fleete in good order, he did set down certaine rules in writing by his Secretary, and firmed thereunto his name, with the names of the other Captaines, which they should obserue and keepe.

Orders that were giuen to euery captain, Master and Pilot, to keepe the same in their voyage.

Item, That all the Fleete, as soone as it is night, shall follow his course, remaining alwayes a sterne the Generall, and that no ship shall carry other light, then onely that which is in the Wyntake, and within the Captaines cabin. Also that the Masters and Pilots keepe their watch, and that they haue a good regard that one ship doe not lay the other a board, and that they do all that were, when the Admirall doth make any signe.

Item, That as soone as it is day, they doe come and salute their Generall, and that in the night they doe not go before him, but that they doe obserue these commaundements, shall pay ten Crownes, and be kept in prison, vntill they arriue there, and that without wages. And for that there was some Masters and Pilots very negligent, by whose default one ship did lay the other a board, he commaunded to remoue them from one ship to another. And by this diligence that was thus vsed, euery man had a regard thereunto, and the Fleete went in good order, & neuer after came in any daunger. Thus going on their course in the moneth of June, and finding themselues ouer against the Cape Buena speranza, there fell vpon them a most horrible great storme of winde, with the which all the Fleete came two dayes and two nights without sayles, so y they were in great daunger to haue bene all cast away, the weather being so darke and close, that it seemed rather night, then day.

The penalty laid vppon the breach of these cõmaundements.

These two dayes being past, they sawe certaine signes of lande, the which as it did appeare, could not be farre off, and for that cause was the weather so close. After that they had obserued y same, & were come nere thereunto, then these signes appeared the greater. And there did the Captaine generall commaunded, that out of his shippe there

Mr. should

Digitized by Google

should be shot two peeces of Ordinance, that the others might after the same manner auntshere with the like, and the better keepe companie the one with the other. This storme being past, they foiunde missing the ship of Lope Mendez. And the Captaine generall seeing that he hadde lost the sight thereof did not let to goe forwarde on his course.

And so, within certaine dayes through the negligence of the Officers, one shippe laude the other a bumbe, and gaue therewith so great a blow vpon the bord of ye other, that with the same there was opened so great a hole, that they might see through the shippe verye well, by the which hole there entered such aboundance of water vpon a sodayne, that she was almost sunke. The Captaine generall bare with the same shippe immediately, and called vnto them that they might well heare him, and the great comforte he gaue them, willyng them not to bee a feared, but to goe forwarde in stopping the leake, without feare to be lost, for that he was there to succour them with his men, which he did sende in his Boate not fearing the seas, that went so high, nor the daunger that they were in.

A great leake giuē vnto one of ỹ ships through negligēce of the saylers

And for all that the Mariners of the ship did to worke, that ouer it was night the leake was halfe stopped, yet that they might end ỹ rest that remaynes to doe, the Captaine generall commaunded to be made a sign by the same shippe, that the other Captaynes might come and succour him, if there were any such neede. The wether being ỹ next daye somewhat calme, the leake was wholy ended, the which was stopped with certaine hides nayles thereunto, and pitched vpon.

The leak stopped, and the daunger thereof past, they sayle forvvard.

This daunger being past, without anye other misshaunce, worth the writing, they arriued at Monsanbique on Sayncte Iames daye, where the Gouernour receiued him verye well, and sent him great refreshing of fresh victualls, and the Letter that Pedro de Tayde had

left

Digitized by Google

leste there for him before his dyd, as I haue sayd before.

Who vnderstanding by the same, of the warres that the King of Calycut had begunne against our men, diddo as soone as the shippe was rigged, and made in a readinesse, which they had brought a grounde for the same purpose, he departed towarde Mylynde, being the first of Auguste. And immediatelye after his arriuall there, the King sent to visite him by one of his principall Moores, by whome hee sent for a Present fiftéene of our men, the which did escape out of the ship that Pedro de Tayde was Captaine of. Certaine Portingales sent vnto the Captain generall for a present.

Within two dayes after this, hee departed toward the Indias, and so came to Anchidiua, where he founde two Gentlemen, the one called Antonyo de Saldanua, and the other Ruy Lorenso, which were Captaines of two shippes, and were in great feare, supposing that our Fleet had bene of the Rumes. Then Antonyo de Saldanua, informed largelye the Captaine generall how he departed the last yeare from Portingale for Vice admirall, with Ruy Lorenso, being giuen him in commission to go & discouer the red Sea with the Countreyes adiacent. And how that in doublyng the Cape, they were verye sorelye troubled with a storme, which was the onelye cause of the separating the one of them from the companye of the other. But Ruy Lorenso as he kept his course after their seperation, met by chaunce in the waye to Sofala, with a certaine ship of the Moores being laden with much golde, the which he toke: & afterward that he had taken the spoyle of the same, hee lefte the hull in keeping at Mylynde: Antonyo de Saldanua went to Quardafun, where he toke many great and exceeding rich prices, without entering at all into the Straights: and from thence he went into the Indias.

And for that he came not to Anchidiua before it was the winter, he was therefore driuen to tarre there with Ruy Lorenso, who hauing passed many dangers, came afterward

 thether

thether, where he pas great trouble, for lacke of victualls.

How the Captaine generall came to Cananor, and spake with the King: and how the Gouernour of Calycut, would haue made peace with him, howbeit he would not consent thereunto. Chap. 76.

The Captaine generall being there, came thether vnto him Lope Mendez de Vasconcelos, who had lost the companye of his Generall, with the fourth wether pas. And immediately after that he was come, the Captaine generall made him ready, for his departure towarde Cananor, where he arriued the first daye of September. There the Factor enformed him of the matters of Calycut, and how that he with his other fellowes that remained in Cananor, had bene themselues oftentimes in daunger of death.

The Captain generall goeth a land to visite the king of Cananor.

The next daye after his comming thether, he would nedes goe a lande to visite the King of Cananor. All the Captaines of the fleete he caused in his company to attende vpon him with their Boates, the which were set forth with their Flagges and Ordinance to the vttermost, and the men apparayled in the best apparayle that they had. And as for the Boate in the which the Captaine generall went, it was couered ouer and beset with Carpetes in the best maner, vpon the which stode his Chayre, the which was made of Crimson Veluet, and at his feete were set two very faire Cushions of the same. His Dublet was also made of Satten, being of sundry colloures, the which was wrought Diamond wise.

The state which the Captaine generall kept at his going to visite the king of Cananor.

And moreouer, his hose were made after the same sorte, and his Shoes were lykewise made of blacke

Veluet,

Digitized by Google

[illegible] which hanged all before with Aglets of golde, and his Cap couered ouer with Buttons suteable to the same: his gowne gaiowne was made of blacke Velvet, after the French fashion, bordered with lace of golde, his Dagger and Rapier which his page held, were hafted with pure golde, and his sheine came three times about his necke, the links whereof were all enameled, and at the same he haude hanging his Scimitar of golde of the like worke. There went before him his three Lackyes appareled as himself, and the Trumpetters with their Flagges of silke. He had also with him certaine other instruments, upon the which they went playing, which were carryed in a little Boate hard by him, and in the same was carried also a present for the king of Cananor, which the king of Portingale sent vnto him.

The present which the king of Portingal sent to the king of Cananor.

This present was five beds of fine holland, with five great pillowes and pillowberes to the same, all wrought with golde. Five Couerlets or Carpets of Crimosin Velvet, bordered with the same, which on the outmost side were all quilted ouer, and had vpon the same three garde of cloth of golde, which in the middest was a Palme in breadth and in the other places of three fingers. The vestiere was all quilted ouer, the which had Curtaines of Crimosin Satten, with fringe made of golde thred. As soone as the Captaine Generall did put off from his shippes, all the Fleete began to shote off. Afterwards the Trumpettes did sound, and the Drums play. After this was ended, then the Nayrs went, and ranged, till they came to the water side, where ther were great multitudes of Moores and Gentiles, which came thether onely to see the Captaine Generall. Who as soone as he had disembarked himselfe, entered into a certeine houfe, the which the king had caused to be made for the same purpose hard by the water side, in the whith the bedstead with the whole furniture apperteining was set vp, and hard by the same there was a place appointed for y captaine generall to sit down on. Where the king of Cananor came, he brought before him three Elephants armed, as though they should fight, and after them there came a number of the Holland

The king of Cananor, brauery and state at his meting with the captaine generall

Digitized by Google

Saintes, with their Ensignes, which were Drumslades, Targets, and Speares. Alſo there came another squadron of two hundred and twelue men. Last of all came the king himselfe sitting in a chaire, the which was very rich. When he was come to this Sentence, the ordinance of all the Fleet was shot out. The Captaine Generall thereby perceiuing the king to be at hande, went forth as farre as the doore to receiue him. And after that they had imbraced each other, he presented him with the key, vnto the which the king did great honour, and layd his hande vpon the same. The Captaine Generall seeing that, left no one in his place appointed, and there they conferred together for the space of two houres. In the meane while a grayhounde of the Captaine Generalls would haue set vpon one of the Elephants, and because he was holden, he therefore barked and plunged in such sort, that there was none that could heare, by reason of the noise they made, neither yet there was anye able to holde him, which was the occasion the king and the Captaine generall were so little time together. After this meeting, there came vnto the Captaine Generall a Moore from Calycut, with whom there was also in compaine a Portugale boy, which brought a letter from such of our men as remained then captiues, from the time of Pedro Aluares Cabrals being there, who told him by word of mouth, that the king of Calycut was so broken in minde with the warres that he had with Edwarte Pacheco, that with pure heauinesse he put himselfe into a Mozcull, sequestring himselfe from all the world.

And that there were many Moores Merchauntes so earnestly bent to followe their trade, that they haue left Calycut, and are gone to dwell in other places, by reason whereof, there is in Calycut greate necessitie of victualls. And therefore that the King of Calycut, the Prince, the Aldermen, and all the dwellers of Calicut are desirous to make peace, and are determined to send vnto him about the same. And gaue our men licence to write thereof to the Captaine Generall, the which they so did, that onely a boat

The Moores forsake Calicut, & goe elsewhere to dwell

Digitized by Google

bout their request, but also to better him to release them out of captivitie.

The Captaine Generall seeing and perusing this Letter, would haue answered the same, but the Boy would not consent thereunto, saying that of force he must needes returne with the same, so that they gaue him no further answere, but to bring this Letter, vppon condition that if he did not returne, they would cutte off the heades of all those Gentlemen that remayned for Captiues in Calycut: Wherevnto the Captaine Generall sent them answere by worde of mouth, that as touching his going to Cochim, it would be shortlye, where he would come to an Anker as neere as he could to Calycut passing by the same: and then they might take occasion to come theyr waye towarde the Fleete, either submitting or not submitting.

This they going about vpon about the Citie, was the occasion that the Captaine Generall gaue them this counsell, although he knewe that they were kept with a gard of Pikes, and all that they kept in the kings house. After all this, he departed towarde Calycut, where he came on Saterdaye the fifteenth of September, and as soone as he came to an Anker, there repayred vnto him the Boye, which brought him y letter to Sandabar, and with him came a Moore Gentleman of Colebyquins, who brought the Captaine Generall a present from y Governours of the citie of Calicut, on whose behalfe they saye, that if so bee he would sende vnto Colebyquin a safe conducte, that then he would come and speake with him, and treate for a peace.

Whereunto he answered, that he would not accepte theyr present, nor anye other thing, vntill such time the peace was concluded vpon: and as for Colebyquin, he might come vnto him without anye feare, as a seruaunt of the king of Portingales. Also priuelye hee sent our men worde that they should indeuour as much as they could to runne away.

He would haue them to escape frō their kepers, & come swimming vnto him

This

This answere being knowne to the gouernours, they sent immediatly Cofebyquin with two captiue Portingales to the Captaine Generall, beleeuing most certainlye, that by this meanes they should worke to make the peace, which they sent to demaunde by the foresaide Cofebyquin, praieng him also to tarrie there 20. seuen dayes, which they supposed would be the longest time that the king would tarry, for that they had sent to call him, and knowing verie well that he would doe all that they would require him. But he gaue them for full answere, that vntil such time they deliuered vnto him the two Italian runagates that liue in Calicut, he would not agree to any thing, which being deliuered, he would then doe what he thought good, but he sent them word no thing of the captiues, for that he thought that at anie time they might ruine their waye. But as soone as the Italians had knowledge, that the Captaine generall did demaund them, they then iudged that if so be the captiues went not with vs, they would ruine awaye, and so gaue notice thereof vnto the gouernours of the Citie, how that the Captaine Generall of the Indies might haue them vpon peace, yea and with such conditions as the king himselfe should require, for that they were men of good estimation, so that the Captaine Generall would not forgo them for any price.

The two Italian runagates iustly required by the Captaine generall to be deliuered.

A craftye deuise of the Italians to haue the captiues closely kept for the assurance of their liues.

The Aldermen giuing credite vnto this, waxed somewhat tolpie in speaking any further of peace, but kept the Captiues from thence forth, in such sort that they could not runne away. And so they remained vntil the comming of the Viceroye Don Francisco de Almeida, in the meane time some there were that did run awaye, and others that died of great infirmities.

Of the great destruction which the Captaine generall made in Calycut, and how he came into Cochin.

Digitized by Google

THE Captaine Generall perceiuing that the gouernours did conclude nothing, and themselues were without hope to haue the captiues, he bent himselfe determinatly to reuenge himselfe with shooting off his ordinaunce both night and day at the Citie, during the which time, he spoiled the same wonderfully, and ouerthrew the kings house and part of their Pagodes, with many other of their houses. He slew also sundry men that came to the water side, whereunto he laye somewhat neere with seuen of his small ships. Howsoeuer he had lieng a long time there, all their boats, in the which were both men and ordinance. This being done, he departes toward Coching, where he arriued on Saterday being the xiii. day of September. All this day he kept himselfe aboord, and thether came our men to visit him. On the next day, he disimbarked himself with the same order as he did at Cananor, where the king of Coching was tarrieng for him, and there receiued him with great pleasure. And after that he had imbraced him, they went hand in hand to the hall, in the which there was a seate of estate, whervpon was set a chaire. And for that the king did sit lowe according to his order, the Captaine generall commaunded to place the chaire somewhat further off from the kings seate, in the which he sat downe also. But all those that were present were greatly offended with him, for that he did not sit vpon his chaire of estate by the king, to whome he deliuered a Letter from the king of Portingale, in the which were rendered vnto him greate thankes, for the fauour he had shewed vnto his subiectes, with many other gratulations. Vnto the which the king answered, that for all such matters he was fully satisfied with the good seruice that Edwarde Pacheco had done vnto him.

Embassadors are to keepe theyr estates for the honor of theyr Princes that sende them.

The next daye after, the Captaine Generall sent him a great some of money, the which the king of Portingale did bestowe vpon him, for that he knewe he was but poore.

Digitized by Google

After all this, he commaunded Pedro de Mendoſa, and Vaſco Caruallo to goe with theyr ſhips to kéepe the coaſt of Calycut, that they might take all ſuch ſhips of ẏ Moꝛes as were laden with Spices: and alſo he ſent Alonſo Lopes de la Coſta, and Peralonſo de Aguylar, and Lyonel Cotinho, and Ruy de Abren, to goe and receiue in theyr lading at Coulan, foꝛ that he knew ther was ſpice in abundaunce.

They met with ſpices better cheap, & neuer had then at Grãgalor.

Moꝛeouer he commaunded Triſtim de la Silua, to goe to Grangalor, betweene the riuers, with foure boates armed, of purpoſe to fight there with certeine Paraos of Calycut, the which were there armed. So Triſtim de la Silua ſhot at ſome of them, and alſo at certeine Nayres, the which iſſued out from certeine pointes of the lande, and ſo without ronning to Grangalor, he toke a ſhip laden with Pepper, with the which he returned to Coching, where he did lade with the other Captaines, which was done verie quietly: and there was ſuch great ſtoꝛe of ſpices, that there was none then néeded.

How Edwarte Pacheco departed from Coulan vnto Coching: and how the Captaine Generall did ſet vppon Grangalor, and what he did there. chap. 78.

EDwarte Pacheco béeing come from the coaſt of Coulan, as ſoone as he had ſight of the Captaines, the which the Captaine generall had ſent, and foꝛ that he ſhuld haue no moꝛe to doe after his arriuall at Coching, ſince there was come another Captaine Generall, did depart toward Coching the xvii. of October, and keeping his courſe, had ſight of a ſhip a farre off in the Sea, toward the which he made all that day, & part of the night, and this ſhip was driuen into Coulan, where hauing

Digitized by Google

hauing talke with the same, he did vnderstand that he was one of the confederates the which came from Coromandil. And immediatlye after were seene other three shippes of Calycut, towarde the which he made his course, and kepte a long the coast with the winde of the shoare. In the morning he went into the Sea, and there he sawe a Saile, the which fled away from him in such sort, y til it was toward the euening he could not ouertake the same, but hard to the lande with the which he fought a good while, for that it had many men that did defend themselues, but at the ende hee made them amaine. The shippe beeing yelded, our men did enter the same by Edwarde Pachecos commaundement, and there were brought a lande certeine of theyr men, the rest he commaunded to be kept prisoners and in yrons, a boord his ship.

A ship of Calicut taken & caried away

And hauing knowledge that this was one of the three of Calicut, the which he went to seeke out, hee put in the same vide of our men to keepe and carrye it with him.

When he was come right ouer against Comorin, there fell vppon him on a sodeine such a hurling Winde, that thereby hee was brought in great hazard to be cast away.

This being past, he came to an Ankor within a leagde of the shore, and there remained all that night, in the which there ranne away well neere thirtie Moores, of the which were twelue taken againe with his Boate. After this, hee went vp and downe, wauering in the winde, tarryeng for the rest of the shippes, and seeing that they came not, nor yet heard no more newes of them, he carryed the foresayde shippe with him to Coulan. After that hee had delyuered the ship to the Factor, with all such merchandile as he had, the which wer many and rich, he departed toward Coching, whers after his comming the ships of the Fleete went to lading. And likewise the others beeing come that were a lading in other places, then the Captaine generall did enter in counsell, whether that they thought good that he should set vpon Cringulor or not, forasmuch as it held on the king of Calycuts side, and was enimie to the king of Coching.

Digitized by Google

The king of Calicut is nowre come forth of ſ Torcul & taketh ſ gouernement vpon him.

And now alſo the king of Calycut was come with all the Torcull to Calycut, and had in the riuer his Captaine generall with foure ſcore Paraos, and fifty ſhippes, and by lande had appointed Nabeadarin with a greate number of men.

And foraſmuch as it was ſpred abroade, that the Captaine Generall did depart toward Portingale, the king of Calycut was minded to returne and leaue the warres. Now the Captaine generall being determined and aduiſed by all the Captaines to ſet vppon Grangalor, he departed one night with xb. boates, the which were armed with paueyſes, and with fiue and twentie Paraos from Coching, replenished with Ordinaunce. Alſo with theſe there went a Carnell, ſo that in the whole there were welnigh a thouſande of our men, with whom there went alſo as manye Nayres of Cochin. In the morning before it was daye, hee came to Palypuerto, for hee durſt venture no further, for that the Boates went verye heauie laden with theyr furniture, by reaſon wherof they could not paſſe the ſhoells that were there.

At this place there came againſt him the Prince with eight hundred Nayres, and after this ſort, ſome there were of them that went by lande, and ſome by water. Thus they departed toward Grangalor, where the king of Calycuts Captaine generall was, in two newe ſhips, the which were cheined together full of Ordinaunce and men, and the moſt of them bowe men. And a ſeuerne theſe ſhippes, and on both their ſides were theſe Paraos with many men alſo.

The Captaine Generall of the enimies had in his company two of his ſonnes, which were accounted for to be very valyaunt Gentlemen. Our Fleet being come, the Ordinaunce beganne to goe off on both parties. Triſtram de la Silua, Alonſo de la coſta, Vaſco carualho, Peralonſo de Aguylar, and Antonio de Saldania, which were in the Vangarde, dydde cloſe with the two ſhips, with the which they fought a while.

Theſe

Digitized by Google

Theſe ſhips being boarded, were immediately yelded, be-
ing firſt of all ſlaine, the Captaine generall and both his
ſonnes, the which fought very valyantlye, and alſo many
others, for that in this place was all the force of the Bat-
tayle. And as touching the Pardos that the other Captains
did ſet vpon, there was but little to doe, forſomuch that as
ſoone as they ſaw their ſhips boarded they fled their wayes.
Whereupon commaundement was giuen by the Captain
generall, that all our men ſhould diſimbarke themſelues, of
whom the firſt five Captains were they that gaue the firſt
aſſaut vpon Nambeadarin, who offered to reſiſt, with cer-
taine Mayzes which he had in his retinue: with whome
our men did fight with ſo valyant a minde, that they made
their enimies to runne awaye. Then our men following
the chaſe did ſet fire to certaine houſes, beſide all the Towne
which was deſpoiled both by the Mayzes and Gentiles, the
which did well knowe, that our men would come vpon thē,
as alſo did Nambeadarin and his men, which fled alwaye
along the water ſide. Eduarde Pacheco, and the Factour
Diego Hernando Correa, with the other Captaines diuide
diſimbarke themſelues in another place, who immediately
began to ſet a fire the Citie. The Captains generall in the
meane while remained along the water ſide to keepe his
men from ſcattering. Then the Chriſtians that dwelt in
this Citie, and that were hidden amongſt the houſes, when
they ſaw the Towne all in a fire, came out from where
they were hidden, crieng with a loude voyce, and requeſt-
ing them not to kill them for that they were Chriſtians.
And ſome of them there were, which went preſently to the Cap-
taine generall, to pray him that for Gods ſake he would
commaund the fire to be quenched, for that they ſhould els
burne certaine Churches of our Ladie and of the Apoſtles
which were in the Citie, as alſo their poore houſes, which
were mingled with the houſes of the Gentiles and Mayzes.
Then for their ſakes, the Generall commaunded the fire
immediately to be quenched, although that many of their
houſes were burnt, which for that they were made of

That the Captain generall of the enimies and his two ſons ſlaine.

The fire commaunded to be quenched

Digitized by Google

for ꝑ pore christians sakes that dvvelt there

ber, his barne quickly. The fire being quenched, our men fel to ransaking of the houses of the Moores, among whom there were many which before time had dwelt in Calicut. Moreouer, the two shippes with their Paraos that were in the water were likewise burnt, besides other three ꝑ were a land. This conflict yet continuing, there came thether the Prince of Coching, who told the Captaine Generall, that Nambeadaryn was not far off with his power, who was determined to returne to the Citie, after that he was departed. Then the Captaines procured licence of the Captaine Generall that he would suffer them to goe seeke him out, & so they did. But as soone as the enimies had sight of them, they ran their way as fast as they could. The Captaine generall seeing this, did returne, & would haue set vpon another Towne the which was not farre off, but for that the Prince of Coching requested him to the contrary, for that the one halfe of the same was his, and that it was impossible to destroy the one halfe without the other: and also for that the King of Calycuts subiects were ready to submit themselues vnto him, praying him to defend them.

After a valiant exploit, the Captaine Generall maketh knights in recõpence of theyr vertue.

Then the Captaine generall entered into the Citie, & did ther make certain Knights, and afterward returned to the Foste, to the which the King of Coching came to visit him.

¶How the King of Tanor sent for succour to the Captaine generall, which he sent him. Cap. 79.

After two or three daies past that the Captaine generall was in the Castle, there came thether vnto him an Embassadour from ꝑ King of Tanor, who is next neighbour to the King of Calicut, who spake vnto him in this order, on ꝑ king his maisters behalfe. That whereas hereto he had bene a friend to the king of Calicut, and did alwaies aid him in all such warres as he had made against Edwarte pacheco, now since he

An embassador sent to the captaine

Digitized by Google

he is come out of the Tarcull, presuming on his great power, and having encreased or rather doubled his pride, doth in recompence of his good seruice, make warres vpon him. And therefore hauing knowledge that the King of Calicut was minded to set forwarde and to succour the Citie of Grangalor, and that his Captaine generall was marching toward the same, he did assemble 4000. Nayres, which he placed in certaine straights, by the which ỳ king of Calicut should passe, & at his comming did set vpon his whole campe & ouerthrew the same, with the death of 2000. of his men, which was the cause ỳ he came not to succour the citie of Grangalor, but with this losse returned to Calicut. Wherefore hauing done this exployt, he remaineth in feare, least he will come and set vpon him. And therefore his request is, that the Captaine generall will succour him, since most hũbly he doth demaund ỳ same: which if he will doe, he will promise him to be true subiect to ỳ king of Portugale. To this Embassage ỳ General answered, ỳ he was wel content to accept him for ỳ kings subiect, & to send Pedro Raphael with his Carvell, in ỳ which were an 300. men, the most whereof were Crossebowmen, & shot. It was a great chance, ỳ the same daye our men came to Tanor, thether came also ỳ king of Calicut by land with his whole campe, & gaue to ỳ king of Tanor battell, in which through ỳ valiantnesse of our men he was ouerthrowen, & many of his slaine. And for this succor ỳ the Generall sent thether, the king of Tanor remained subiect to ỳ king of Portingale. With this ouerthrow ỳ king of Calicut continued in great feare, & in lesse credit with ỳ Moores, then he had with ỳ victories that Edwarde Pacheco had gotten against him: because thosse warres were made with strangers, but this with ỳ king of Tanor, who is his neighbor. Which thing was ỳ cause, ỳ all such Moores, as dwelt in Calicut & Grangalor conceiued now so great a misliking to trade toward Meca, ỳ they determined to return to their countries: & for this cause, they laded xvii. great ships in Pandarane, fortifieng them to defend themselues from our men ỳ better, & to offend thẽ, if they should come.

tain generall from the king of Tanor, who made the Oration folowing

The king of Calycuts whol powver ouerthrowen at Tanor, by ỳ king therof, & the Portingales

Also

Digitized by Google

And there they remaine Pacheco and I ; likewise a lading as soone as they could haue it.

How the Captaine generall fought in Pandarane with seuenteene great ships of the Moores, and how he ouercame them and burned them.

Chap. 79.

"The Captaine generall perceiuing that no
"force he could deuise returne, with all such
"ships as were auen, by countaile of the
"Captaines, and for feare of the king of
"Cochin and of the Moores there, did
"there appoint and leaue in Cochin a Capi-
"taine generall, with whom he left a ship and two Carects,
"the one of Pedro Raphael, and the other of Diego Pieres.
"This Captaine sent a Gentleman called Manuel Pelezoa
"Valencian, vnto the Captaine generall as present vnto
"the king of Cochin, who had a great deale more desire
"that Edwarte Pacheco should haue remained, for his good
"seruice, and affection he shew him, as I haue said. Howbeit
"notwithstanding he durst not demaund his tarrying at the
"Captaine generalls hands, so much as he was of a very
"ill condition. Edwarte Pacheco hauing knowledge of this
"king, for vnto Angala, prayed him ere that he departed to
"speake with the king of Cochin, the which he so did.
"For whose departure the king remained very sorrowfull,
"requesting him to tarrie if to be it were possible in the in-
"dia, and not to leaue him so, that as yet he did not thinke
"himselfe cleare from the subiection of Calecut, and also he told
"him that he remembred that he had promised him sundry
"times not to goe away, vntill such time he had made him
"king of Calecut, and since as yet he had not the possession
"of the same, he desired him not to leaue him. Edwarte Pa-
"checo answered him, that he left him no wicked one time,
"hauing the Countrey verie quiet, forsomuch as the king
"of Calecut hath beene and now is abated so greatly of his

pride,

the effect of the wordes, which the King of Cochin spake to Edwarte Pacheco at his departure.

The answere that Edwarte Pacheco, gaue to the king of Cochin

Digitized by Google

pride, that he needed not to stande in no feare of him anye more. For sufficient proofe whereof was, if none other thing, that now he sawe the Moores of Meca to go theyr way from Calycut as men desperate for the losse of their trade. Also that his going for Portingale was not but to returne, and then to serue him for a longer time, and more at his pleasure. With this aunswere the King was somwhat satisfied, and with the teares in his eyes desired him to pardon him, for that he did not giue him all that was his desire, in recompence of the seruice he had done for him, in consideration that he was so poore, as he did well knowe. Howbeit he intreated him, that of his Pepper which hée had, he would take what he would. The good will of a thankfull minde is much more worth the many gifts

But Edwarte Pacheco would haue nothing, saieng, that he did trust in God, that when he returned to Coching, hée should finde him very rich, & in his prosperitie, and then he would receiue reward of him. And with this he departed, the King with all his subiects remaining verye heauie for his departure. Howeuer, the King wrote vnto the king of Portingale of all Edwarte Pacheco successes in the warres, and what he had done for him. After this the Captain gerall departed toward Cananor, the xvi. of September, carrieng in his companye those Captaines which shoulde remaine in the Indias. His good will & intent was, to come to an Anker in the harbour of Panane, and there to visite the King of Tanor. But by reason of the ill weather they had, and their naughtie Pilots they could not reach ỳ same, but were driuen to Calycut and Pandarane. And from thence he commaunded Pedro Raphael and Diego Pieres to go before the Fleete, and to loke out, whether they could sée any ships of the Moores. Being arriued at Pandarane, & bearing along the Coast with a small winde, there came vpon them x. Paraos of the xvii. ships that wer ther a lading. Our men hauing sight of them, began forthwith to shote at them with their ordinaunce. The other Captayns being a Sea bord, and hearing the sound of the ordinance, did returne, and bare as close by the winde as they could.

Digitized by Google

And hauing ſight of the ſhips of the Moores to be a ground, came to Cananor by the Captaine generalls commaundement, who immediately entered into counſaile, in ẏ which it was determined by the whole conſent of his Captains, that they ſhuld fight with thoſe Moores, and that they ſhuld goe in their boates, for that their ſhips could not come nere vnto them, by reaſon they were within the Barre. And for that the enimies were many, that therefore they ſhould do what they could to cloſe with the ſhips, the which as ſone as they had done, they ſhuld ſet the ſame a fire. This being appointed, the Captaine general with all ẏ other Captains of the Fleete, did imbarke themſelues in their boates, the which were in all xv. in the which all the ſouldiers of the Fleete did imbarke themſelues, and that with a great courage for that they went to fight with their enimies. Theſe Moores as I ſayd, had their ſhips within the Barre, lying one cloſe by another, with their ſternes toward the land, and in the moſt part of them wer many ſouldiers, ẏ which were men of coulour white. Their weapons were bowes and arrowes, and alſo they had much ordinaunce. And on the land, at the entering of the barre were placed two peces of ordinaunce vpon a ſmall bulwarke which they had made. Our men bearing nere to this barre, had ſight of the Captaine generall, and how the Caruells were ſomewhat farre off the ſhore, and that they came not, for that ẏ wind was but ſmall, and therefore were perforce driuen to returne backe for them, & to bring them by force of the oare within the Barre, for to ſuccour their boates. The other Captaines (although they ſaw him returne) went forward by force of the oare, and at the entering of the Barre, the Pellets fell as though it had rayned amongſt them. But for all this they entered, ſhoting of all their Ordinaunce. But as their enimies were farre more then they, ſo theyr arrowes were without number. And for that our men by reaſon they wer ſomwhat low vnder their ſhips, wer open without any defence, therefore did they receiue great hurt, not onely by their ordinance, but alſo by their arrowes.

The great prouiſion of the Moores againſt ſo fewe ſmall boates.

Here

Here as it appeared, was all the force of the battaile: and for all the stoutnesse that was shewed by the enimies, yet our men entred into the middes of all the multitude of the shot, by force of the oare, in such sort ꝑ it appered as though the boats did flye, the men crying out S. Iames, S. Iames, ¶ with ꝑ they laid those ships aboord: ꝑ first ꝑ laid any ship aboord was Tristim de la Silua, as soone as he was within the bar. And as ꝑ men of this ship were many, so they did shoote such abundance of arrows ¶ threw so many stones, ꝑ they made our men put off, who being off did immediately close with another, in ꝑ which for that there wer not so many, they boorded the same in despite of the Moores for all their stoutnes, in ꝑ which wer some of them slaine, ¶ those that remained aliue leapt for feare into the water ¶ swam away. About ꝑ same time ꝑ Tristim de la Silua had layde this ship a boord, Alonso de la cocta did the like vnto another, which he toke to be ꝑ Admirall, of ꝑ which a Turke was Captaine with all his company, which were manye. And at the boording of this ship, were throwen such a multitude of stones and darts, that it was a wonder to see. It chaunced that before our men came to this ship, the enimies shooting at them with a peece, ꝑ which was lieng vpō the vpper decke, with ꝑ recoyling it rent out a peece of the ship side, so ꝑ ther was made so great a hole, ¶ the enimies not regarding it, thought it more needfull to succor ꝑ forepart of their ship. And when our boat came hard a boord ꝑ same side where this hole was, our men did enter by the same. The first that entered, was Alonso Lopes Maker, ¶ another Aluoro Lopes, who was ꝑ kings seruant, ¶ is now towne Clarke in Santaren, with diuers others. These altogether with those ꝑ came afterward, so fought with their enimies, that in the same conflict there were many slaine, others hid themselues vnder the hatches, ¶ also others lept into ꝑ water, at ꝑ which time the most part of them were drowned, for that they wer laden with shirts of male. Immediatelye one Pero Alonso de Aguylar layde another ship a boord, hauing in his company Lyonel Cotinuo, and

It had ben better to haue called vppon God to haue succoured them in that extremyty.

Digitized by Google

also Edwarte Pacheco, Vaſco Caruallo, Antonyo de Saldano, and Ruy Lorenso, who all behaued themſelues very valyauntly. And as ſone as they had taken this ſhip, they immediately ſet the ſame a fire, and it toke the ſame very furiouſly, ſo that thereby their enemies were ſo exceedingly afeard, that the moſt part of them leapt into the water and drowned themſelues. While this was a doing, thether came the Captayne generall, with the Caruells, and beeing entered within the Barre, he lefte them. Then one of the peeces that were on the lande was ſhot off with a pellet, which ſtrake the Caruell of Pedro Raphael in ſuch ſort, & in ſuch a place, that with the ſame were three of his men ſlaine and ten ſore hurt, and for lacke of winde, the ſloude carried him vnder the forecaſtle of a ſhip, of thoſe that wer not as yet layd aboord, the which had many men. And for that the ſhippe was higher then the Caruell, who had the ſame vnder his ſprit ſaile, therefore the enimies did enter, and handeled our men very ill, for that they altogether did ſet vpon them. Alſo there was another peece ſhot, with the which the Maſter of the ſhip was ſlain, being at the helme gouerning the Caruell, which being thus left at random, before that there came any other to the helme, the Caruell fell vpon certaine Rockes, where ſhe remained till the battaile was ended. The Captaine generall viewing the danger that Pedro Raphael was in, commaunded him to bee ſuccoured, and ſo it was done. Then our men entering into the Caruell, the which was full of Moores, they behaued themſelues ſo valyantly, that they made them flye awaye, but notwithſtanding all our men that were within ỳ Caruell were ſore hurt. In the meane ſpace, all the ſhips of the enimies were burnt, and this alſo at the laſt, in the which was burnt great ſtore of Merchaundiſe, for that the ſame was laden. Which was done the rather, for that vpon the land there were many of the enimies which wer aſſembled together. And for that of our men there were many hurt, the Captain generall came his way with all his Captains toward their ſhips, where he found that there were ſlaine

The Mores for feare leap into the ſea, & drowne theſelues.

Here vvas a great ſlaughter of the Portingals in reſpect of other battailes fought.

of

Digitized by Google

of our men xxb. and hurt an hundred and xxvii. men. But for all this the victorie was great. For ouer and besides the burning of the shippes with all their riches, the which was much, the Captaine generall was giuen to vnderstand by the Moores of Cananor, (to the which place from thence he went) that ther were slaine in this battell two thousand men. With this spoyle the king of Calicut remained so ill contented, that frō that time for a good while after, he could not refore himself, for that his losse was great, besides that the Moores went from Calycut, by reason whereof there was so great necessitie & lacke of victuals there, that the citie remained almost vninhabited.

Of the safe arriuall of the Captaine Generall at Lisborne, and of the great honour the king Don Manuel gaue to Edwarte Pacheco. chap. 80.

THe next day after, the which was the first day of Januarie, the Captaine Generall departed toward Cananor, for that there he went to take in the rest of his lading. And being there arriued, the Factor gaue him to vnderstand of the great victory that he had gotten in Pandarane, and how the Moores were very pensiue for the same, suspecting that from thence forth all our men might remaine in the Indias, and that without feare. For as their pride was before this victorie great, so their pretence was alwayes thought to be, to kill both the Factor, and all those that remained with him. The like tale also did the king of Cananor alwayes tell. The Captaine Generall beeing readie to departe, before his going he made an Oration vnto Manuel Telez, and those that remained with him touching that which they should doe, laieng before them the great seruice that Edwarte Pacheco had done, and therefore he woulde giue him no greater a Fleete then Francisco de Alburquerque left, and an hundred fighting men in it. But after that he was departed,

The number of ships and men, vvhich vvere left in the Indias vvith Manuel Telez the Captain generall

Digitized by Google

there were in the Indias no more warres, for that the king of Calycut remained as in case aforesaid. The Captaine generall being departed from Cananor toward Portingale, he arriued at Mylinde the first day of September, where without comming a land, he sent Antonio de Saldanna to ỹ citie, for many rich prises which he had left there, & had taken before at the Cape Quardafum, where he went toward the Indias. And from thence he directed his course toward Quiloa, to recouer ther ỹ kings tribute, which ỹ king wold not pay. From thence he departed the tenth day of Februarye, without chaunsing vnto him any thing worth the writing, arriued at Lisbborne the 22. day of June. 1525. with two ships more then he carried out with him, when he went toward the Indias. All these were laden with great store of riches, for the which the king Don Manuel gaue him great honour, and the like he did to Edwarte Pacheco, after ỹ he vnderstood what good seruice he had done him in the Indias, & how by his meanes the Factorie was there mainteined, & also the credit of his power. And for that all men shuld haue knowledge of so notable seruice, immediatly vpon thursday next after the Captaine generals arriuall, was commaunded to be made a solempne Procession, as they vse on corpus Christi day, in the which he went from ỹ high church, vnto Santo Domingus, carieng with him Edwarte Pacheco. In this Church there was a Sermon, made by the Bishop of Vizew called Don Diego Ortis, who brought in by order, all that Edwarte Pacheco had done in the warres against the king of Calycut. This feast was not onely kept in Lisbborne, but also in Algaruy, & in all the cities & notable townes of Portingale, which was so done by the kings commaundement. Moreouer, he wrote of the same vnto the Pope, by Don Ioan Sutill, which was then Bishop of safin, who had the carriage of those letters. Besides ỹ, he sent the same to many christian Princes, ỹ they might know of those notable acts & victories, being such a thing, as within these our dayes no prince hath done ỹ like for his subiects, nor no subiectes done ỹ like for theyre princes.

1525.

Indeede this Edvvarte Pacheco vvel deserued great honor & cõmendatiõ for his seruice

FINIS.

Digitized by Google

Imprinted at London by
Thomas East, dwelling betweene
Paules Wharfe and Bay-
nards Castle,
1582.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google